

Some Exact Solutions in General Relativity

Master's thesis

by

Petarpa Boonserm

A thesis submitted to the
Victoria University of Wellington
in fulfilment of the requirements
for the degree of
Master of Science in Mathematics

VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF WELLINGTON

Te Whare Wānanga o te Ūpoko o te Ika a Māui



2005

Supervisor: Dr. Matt Visser

Abstract

In this thesis four separate problems in general relativity are considered, divided into two separate themes: coordinate conditions and perfect fluid spheres. Regarding coordinate conditions we present a pedagogical discussion of how the appropriate use of coordinate conditions can lead to simplifications in the form of the spacetime curvature — such tricks are often helpful when seeking specific exact solutions of the Einstein equations. Regarding perfect fluid spheres we present several methods of transforming any given perfect fluid sphere into a possibly new perfect fluid sphere. This is done in three qualitatively distinct manners: The first set of solution generating theorems apply in Schwarzschild curvature coordinates, and are phrased in terms of the metric components: they show how to transform one static spherical perfect fluid spacetime geometry into another. A second set of solution generating theorems extends these ideas to other coordinate systems (such as isotropic, Gaussian polar, Buchdahl, Synge, and exponential coordinates), again working directly in terms of the metric components. Finally, the solution generating theorems are rephrased in terms of the TOV equation and density and pressure profiles. Most of the relevant calculations are carried out analytically, though some numerical explorations are also carried out.

Acknowledgements

I would like to thank my supervisor, Dr. Matt Visser for his guidance and support. I am lucky to have such an active and hard working supervisor. I really appreciate the effort he made for my thesis, making sure that things got done properly and on time. I would also like to thank Silke Weinfurtner, who I collaborated with on several projects, for her help, support, and encouragement.

I am grateful to the School of Mathematics, Statistics, and Computer Science for providing me with an office and all the facilities, and the Thai Government Scholarship that provided me with funding.

I also would like to say thanks to my family who were also very supportive and listened to me.

Finally, I would like to extend my gratitude to Brijesh Dongol for always being there to listen to me. I am not sure that this thesis would have been finished without the support he showed.

Preface

This thesis looks at four problems in general relativity:

- Coordinate conditions in general relativity: A method of looking for nice solutions of the Einstein equations.
- Develop several new transformation theorems that map perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.
- Develop a systematic way of classifying the set of all perfect fluid spheres.
- Rephrase all these theorems which apply in Schwarzschild coordinates, directly in terms of the pressure profile and density profile.

General relativity (GR) or general relativity theory (GRT) is a theory of gravitation discovered by Albert Einstein. The fundamental physical postulate of GR is that the presence of matter causes curvature in the spacetime in which it exists. This curvature is taken to be the gravitational field produced by the matter. Einstein's field equation gives the mathematical description of how the matter and curvature are related. Moreover, once this curvature is given, GR describes how other objects (such as planets and light beams) move in this gravitational field via the geodesic equation.

In addition, general relativity states that clocks run slower in strong gravitational fields (or highly accelerated frames), predicting a gravitational redshift. It also predicts the existence of gravitational lensing, gravitational waves, gravitomagnetism, the Lense-Thirring effect, and relativistic precession of orbiting bodies.

The first problem is looking for nice solutions of the Einstein equations. However, Before stating Einstein's equation, we need to briefly describe the concept of special relativity, otherwise general relativity will be hard to understand.

Structure of the thesis

This thesis has been written with the goal of being accessible to people with a basic background in general relativity, especially in coordinate conditions in general relativity and perfect fluid spheres.

This thesis is made up of six chapters and three appendices. Two of appendices are papers published on work relating to this thesis. One was produced as a collaboration with Dr. Matt Visser, Silke Weinfurtner, Celine Cattoen and Tristan Faber. The second was produced in collaboration with Dr. Matt Visser and Silke Weinfurtner. At the time of writing all papers have been published.

Contents

Acknowledgements	iii
Preface	v
1 General introduction	1
1.1 Introduction	1
1.2 Einstein's equation	2
1.2.1 General and Special Covariance	2
1.3 Special Relativity	3
1.3.1 Minkowski space-time	3
1.3.2 The Stress-Energy Tensor	5
1.3.3 Relativistic hydrodynamics	7
1.4 Conclusion	9
1.4.1 Postulational formulation of special relativity	9
1.4.2 The correspondence principle	10
1.4.3 Discussion	10
2 Coordinate conditions in general relativity	13
2.1 Introduction	13
2.2 Independent components: Riemann's argument	15
2.2.1 For $n = 1$	15
2.2.2 For $n = 2$	16
2.2.3 For $n = 3$	17

2.2.4	For $n = 4$	17
2.3	Lorentzian manifolds	18
2.4	The block diagonal ansatz	22
2.4.1	Collected results for the connexion	25
2.4.2	Back to the Ricci tensor: qualitative results	25
2.4.3	Calculating the Ricci tensor - diagonal pieces	28
2.4.4	Off-diagonal part of the Ricci tensor	31
2.4.5	Discussion	33
2.5	The ADM (Arnowitt-Deser-Misner) ansatz	34
2.5.1	ADM Decomposition	34
2.5.2	Reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) Decomposition	36
2.6	Static spacetimes: ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) Decomposition	37
2.7	Zero-shift spacetimes: ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) Decom-	
	position	38
2.7.1	Systematic derivation	40
2.7.2	Riemann tensor	40
2.8	General stationary spacetime: ADM Decomposition	43
2.8.1	Christoffel symbols of first kind	45
2.8.2	Completely general ADM decomposition	52
2.8.3	The inverse-ADM decomposition	52
2.8.4	Christoffel symbols of the 2 metrics $-1/N^2$ and h_{ij}	55
2.8.5	Collected results for the connection	56
2.9	Conclusion	56
3	Perfect fluid spheres in general relativity	59
3.1	Introduction	59
3.2	Six theorems for generating perfect fluid spheres	60
3.2.1	The first theorem	67
3.2.2	The second theorem	72
3.2.3	The third and fourth theorems	78
3.2.4	Formal properties of the generating theorems	80
3.2.5	Seed and non-seed metrics	82

3.2.6	The fifth and sixth theorems	86
3.3	Formal properties of the linking theorems	88
3.4	Classifying perfect fluid spheres	92
3.5	Discussion	99
4	Solution generating theorems — other coordinates	101
4.1	General diagonal coordinates:	101
4.2	Schwarzschild (curvature) coordinates:	102
4.3	Isotropic coordinates:	103
4.3.1	The seventh and eighth theorems	104
4.3.2	Two linking generating theorems:	108
4.4	Gaussian polar coordinates:	109
4.4.1	The ninth theorem	110
4.5	Buchdahl coordinates:	114
4.6	Synge isothermal coordinates:	115
4.7	Exponential coordinates:	117
4.8	Discussion	119
5	TOV equation - related theorems	121
5.1	Introduction	121
5.2	TOV equation	121
5.2.1	Interior equation	121
5.3	A perfect fluid sphere in Schwarzschild coordinates	124
5.4	Solution generating theorems	129
5.4.1	Four theorems	129
5.4.2	Four theorems in terms of pressure and density	130
5.4.3	Discussion	135
6	Conclusions	139
6.1	The main analysis: Structure of the thesis	139
6.2	Further interesting issues	140

A	Generating perfect fluid spheres in general relativity	143
A.1	Introduction	144
A.2	Solution generating theorems	145
A.2.1	Four theorems	146
A.2.2	Formal properties of the generating theorems	155
A.2.3	Seed and non-seed metrics	157
A.2.4	Two linking theorems	159
A.2.5	Formal properties of the linking theorems	161
A.3	Classifying perfect fluid spheres	165
A.4	Discussion	170
	References	173
B	Effective refractive index tensor for weak-field gravity	175
B.1	Introduction	176
B.2	Static case	177
B.3	Static spherically symmetric weak field	181
B.4	Stationary case	184
B.5	Time dependent situations	186
B.6	The far field	186
B.7	Discussion	188
B.8	Appendix: Moving medium interpretation	189
	References	191
C	Maple worksheets	193
C.1	First worksheet	193
C.2	Second worksheet	203
C.3	Third worksheet	214
C.4	Fourth worksheet	227
	Bibliography	237

List of Figures

1.1	This structure shows the correspondence principle for general relativity.	10
3.1	A Pulsating spherical star cannot emit gravitational waves.	65
3.2	The solid lines show $B(r)$ for 10 reapplications of Theorem 1 onto the Minkowski metric. The dashed line corresponds to a single application with a specific choice for λ_{once} . It can be seen that 10 applications of Theorem 1 can be expressed by one application.	71
3.3	This structure shows that when we apply theorem 1 to Minkowski, we get an Einstein static universe as a new metric.	71
3.4	The solid lines show $\zeta(r)$ for 10 reapplications of Theorem 2 onto the Minkowski metric. The dashed line corresponds to a single application with a specific choice for σ_{once} and ϵ_{once} . It can be seen that 10 applications of Theorem 2 can be expressed by one application.	77
3.5	This structure shows that when we apply theorem 2 to Minkowski, we get the K-O III geometry.	78
3.6	This structure shows that Theorem 3 and theorem 4 are in general distinct. When we apply theorem 3 to Minkowski, we get the Schwarzschild Interior geometry, while applying theorem 4 to the Minkowski, we get Martin 3	81
3.7	This structure shows that when we invoke theorem 5 and apply it to Minkowski space, then making the choice $Z_0 = 1 + r^2/a^2$ leads to the general Tolman IV metric.	88
3.8	Structure graph for Minkowski space used as seed metric.	97

3.9	Numerical implementations of Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 can be used to investigate the behavior for n applications, if the number of applications goes to infinity. For specific choices of parameters λ_i , σ_i , and ϵ_i , multiple reapplications of Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 approach a limit, in the sense that both metric components are converging towards there fixed-points.	98
4.1	This structure shows that Theorem 7 and Theorem 8 are in general distinct. When we apply Theorem 7 to seed metric, we get a new solution, while applying Theorem 8 to seed metric, we get the other new solution. Furthermore, the diagram shows that Theorem 7 and Theorem 8 in general commute.	110
4.2	This structure shows that Theorem 9 is idempotent. When we apply Theorem 9 to Minkowski as a seed metric, we get the K-O III as a new solution.	114
5.1	The diagram shows that when we write out equation (5.4) in terms of ρ , p , and u^b , and projecting the resulting equation parallel and perpendicular to u_a , we can spilt up the equation in to two equations.	123
A.1	The solid lines show $B(r)$ for 10 reapplications of Theorem 1 onto the Minkowski metric. The dashed line corresponds to a single application with a specific choice for λ_{once} . It can be seen that 10 applications of Theorem 1 can be expressed by one application.	148
A.2	The solid lines show $\zeta(r)$ for 10 reapplications of Theorem 2 onto the Minkowski metric. The dashed line corresponds to a single application with a specific choice for σ_{once} and ϵ_{once} . It can be seen that 10 applications of Theorem 2 can be expressed by one application.. . . .	153
A.3	Structure graph for Minkowski as seed metric.	169

A.4	A numerical implementations of Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 can be used to investigate the behavior for n applications, if the number of applications goes to infinity. For specific choices of parameters λ_i , σ_i and ϵ_i reapplications of Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 approaching a limit, in the sense that both metric components are converging towards their fixed-points.	171
-----	--	-----

List of Tables

3.1	This table shows several seed and non-seed metrics, which satisfied the definition of seed and non-seed metrics (see Table 3.2 for further details).	84
3.2	Some well-known perfect fluid spheres and their corresponding metrics. Note that we have often reparameterized these metrics to make them easier to deal with, and so their appearance (but not the substance) may differ from other sources [9, 11, 20]. Metric S1 is a special case of K–O III, Tolman V, and Tolman VI, notable for its extreme simplicity.	93
3.3	Some apparently new perfect fluid spheres and their corresponding metrics. Sometimes the relevant integrals cannot be done in elementary form. When they can be done they are explicitly shown.	94
3.4	Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 1–4. The notation “[integral]” denotes a metric so complicated that explicitly writing out the relevant integral is so tedious that it does not seem worthwhile.	95
3.5	Non-seed solutions and their generalizations.	95
5.1	Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 1B in terms of pressure and density profile.	136
5.2	Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 2B in terms of pressure and density profile.	136
5.3	Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 3B in terms of pressure and density profile. The notation “[integral]” denotes a metric so complicated that explicitly writing out the relevant integral is so tedious that it does not seem worthwhile.	137

5.4	Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 4B in terms of pressure and density profile. The notation “[integral]” denotes a metric so complicated that explicitly writing out the relevant integral is so tedious that it does not seem worthwhile.	138
A.1	Some well-known perfect fluid spheres and their corresponding metrics. Note that we have often reparameterized these metrics to make them easier to deal with, and so their appearance (but not the substance) may differ from other sources [1, 2, 3]. Metric S1 is a special case of K–O III, Tolman V, and Tolman VI notable for its extreme simplicity. .	166
A.2	Some apparently new prefect fluid spheres and their corresponding metrics. Sometimes the relevant integrals cannot be done in elementary form. When they can be done they are explicitly shown.	167
A.3	Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 1–4. The notation “[integral]” denotes a metric so complicated that explicitly writing out the relevant integral is so tedious that it does not seem worthwhile.	168
A.4	Non-seed solutions and their generalizations.	168

Chapter 1

General introduction

1.1 Introduction

General relativity (GR) is the theory of space, time and gravitation formulated by Einstein in 1915. General relativity is a beautiful theory, however it is often regarded as a very deep and difficult theory. It has been considerably developed since the late 1950s. Furthermore, in the mid 1960s, the modern theory of gravitational collapse, singularities, and black holes has been developed. In this thesis, we present the coordinate condition in general relativity, we will discuss the recent advances and developments in methods of looking for a nice solutions of Einstein equation. In addition, we also present the perfect fluid spheres in general relativity. Understanding the concept of perfect fluid spheres are important. They are first approximations to attempt at building a realistic model for a general relativistic star. We introduce the “algorithmic” techniques that permit one to generate large classess of perfect fluid spheres in a purely mechanical way. Furthermore, we will extend these algorithmic ideas, by proving several solution-generating theorems of varying levels of complexity. We shall then explore the formal properties of these solution-generating theorems and then will use these theorems to classify some of the previously known exact solutions. Indeed, we develop several new transformation theorems that map perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres. Additionally, we develop a systematic way of classifying the set of all perfect fluid spheres. The remaining part of this thesis will be devoted to

rephrasing all these theorems, which originally apply in Schwarzschild coordinates, directly in terms of the pressure profile and density profile.

Now we would like to give a mathematically precise formulation of the ideas in Einstein's equation. Before stating Einstein's equation, we need to describe in brief the concept of special relativity, otherwise general relativity will be hard to understand.

1.2 Einstein's equation

To start we give an exposition of elementary topics in the geometry of space, and the spatial tensorial character of physical laws in prerelativity physics. We formulate general relativity and provide a motivation for Einstein's equation, which relates the geometry of spacetime to the distribution of matter in the universe.

1.2.1 General and Special Covariance

Assume that space has the manifold structure of \mathbb{R}^3 and the association of points of space with elements (x^1, x^2, x^3) of \mathbb{R}^3 can be accomplished by construction of a *rigid rectilinear grid* of metersticks. We call the coordinates of space derived in this manner as *Cartesian coordinates* [24]. The distance, S , between two points, x and \bar{x} , defined in terms of Cartesian coordinates by

$$S^2 = (x^1 - \bar{x}^1)^2 + (x^2 - \bar{x}^2)^2 + (x^3 - \bar{x}^3)^2 \quad (1.1)$$

This formula is the distance between two points.

Referred to equation (1.1), the distance between two *nearby* points is

$$(\delta S)^2 = (\delta x^1)^2 + (\delta x^2)^2 + (\delta x^3)^2 \quad (1.2)$$

Therefore, the metric of space is given by

$$ds^2 = (dx^1)^2 + (dx^2)^2 + (dx^3)^2 \quad (1.3)$$

In the Cartesian coordinate basis, we derive

$$ds^2 = \sum_{a,b} h_{ab}(dx^a)(dx^b) \quad (1.4)$$

with $h_{ab} = \text{diag}(1, 1, 1)$. This definition of h_{ab} is independent of choice of Cartesian coordinate system.

When the components of the metric in the Cartesian coordinate basis are constants, we get

$$\partial_a h_{bc} = 0. \quad (1.5)$$

The space is the manifold \mathbb{R}^3 which possesses a flat Riemann metric. We are able to use the geodesics of the flat metric to construct a Cartesian coordinate system. We use the fact that initially parallel geodesics remain parallel because the curvature vanishes.

1.3 Special Relativity

1.3.1 Minkowski space-time

We introduce a *4-dimensional* continuum called space-time in which an event has coordinates (t, x, y, z) [19].

Minkowski space-time is defined as a *4-dimensional* manifold provided with a *flat* metric of signature $+2$. By the definition, since the metric is flat, there exists a special coordinate system covering the whole manifold in which the metric is diagonal, with diagonal elements equal to ± 1 . For convenience, we prefer to use the convention that lower case latin indices run from 0 to 3. The special coordinate system is called a Minkowski coordinate system and is written

$$(x^a) = (x^0, x^1, x^2, x^3) = (ct, x, y, z). \quad (1.6)$$

In special relativity [24], it is assumed that spacetime has the manifold structure of \mathbb{R}^4 .

The spacetime interval, \mathcal{S} , between two events x and \bar{x} defined by

$$\mathcal{S} = -(x^0 - \bar{x}^0)^2 + (x^1 - \bar{x}^1)^2 + (x^2 - \bar{x}^2)^2 + (x^3 - \bar{x}^3)^2 \quad (1.7)$$

in units where $c = 1$.

From the equation (1.7), we are able to define the *metric of spacetime* η_{ab} by

$$ds^2 = \sum_{a,b=0}^3 \eta_{ab} dx^a dx^b \quad (1.8)$$

with $\eta_{ab} = \text{diag} (-1, 1, 1, 1)$, where x^a is any global inertial coordinate system.

Therefore, the ordinary derivative operator, ∂_a , of the global inertial coordinates satisfies

$$\partial_a \eta_{bc} = 0 \quad (1.9)$$

The curvature of η_{ab} vanishes. In addition, we can parameterize timelike curves by *proper time*, τ , defined by

$$\tau = \int (-\eta_{ab} T^a T^b)^{1/2} dt, \quad (1.10)$$

where t = arbitrary parameterization of the curve, and T^a = the tangent to the curve in this parameterization.

The tangent vector u^a to a timelike curve parameterized by τ is defined by the *4-velocity* of the curve. The square of any 4-vector is an invariant and so

$$u^a u_a = -c^2, \quad (1.11)$$

where $c = 1$ so we get,

$$u^a u_a = -1. \quad (1.12)$$

In the absence of external forces, its *4-velocity* will satisfy the equation of motion,

$$u^a \partial_a u^b = 0, \quad (1.13)$$

where ∂_a is the derivative operator associated with η_{ab} . In addition, when forces are present, the equation (1.13), $u^a \partial_a u^b$ is nonzero. Furthermore, all material particles have a parameter known as “rest mass”, m , which appears as a parameter in the equations of motion when forces are present. We can define the energy momentum 4-vector, p^a , of a particle of mass m by

$$p^a = m u^a. \quad (1.14)$$

Finally, we can define the energy of particle which is measured by an observer – present at the site of the particle – as

$$E = -p_a v^a, \quad (1.15)$$

where v^a is the 4-velocity of the observer.

In special relativity, the energy is the “time component” of the 4-vector, p^a . At the rest frame, a particle with respect to the observer, equation (1.15) reduces to the familiar formula $E = m c^2$. When the spacetime metric, η_{ab} is flat, and the parallel transport is path independent, we are able to define the energy of a particle as measured by an observer who is not present at the site of the particle and has 4-velocity parallel to that of the distant observer.

1.3.2 The Stress-Energy Tensor

In special relativity, we define the *energy-momentum* 4-vector of a particle of mass m as in equation (1.14).

From [19], the Minkowski line element takes the form

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + dx^2 + dy^2 + dz^2 \quad (1.16)$$

We can write this in tensorial form as

$$ds^2 = \eta_{ab} dx^a dx^b, \quad (1.17)$$

We take η_{ab} to denote the Minkowski metric

$$\eta_{ab} \equiv \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & +1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & +1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & +1 \end{bmatrix} = \text{diag}(-1, +1, +1, +1) \quad (1.18)$$

In relativistic units the equation for the proper time satisfies

$$d\tau^2 = -ds^2. \quad (1.19)$$

Now we present proper time τ relates to coordinate time t for any observer whose velocity at time t is v , where

$$v = \left(\frac{dx}{dt}, \frac{dy}{dt}, \frac{dz}{dt} \right). \quad (1.20)$$

So we have,

$$\begin{aligned}
d\tau^2 &= -ds^2 = -(-c^2 dt^2 + dx^2 + dy^2 + dz^2) \\
&= -dt^2 \left[-c^2 + \left(\frac{dx}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(\frac{dy}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(\frac{dz}{dt} \right)^2 \right] \\
&= -c^2 dt^2 \left\{ -1 + \frac{1}{c^2} \left[\left(\frac{dx}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(\frac{dy}{dt} \right)^2 + \left(\frac{dz}{dt} \right)^2 \right] \right\} \\
&= c^2 dt^2 \left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2} \right) \\
d\tau &= \left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2} \right)^{1/2} c dt
\end{aligned} \tag{1.21}$$

The time-component of the energy-momentum vector does represent the energy of the particle

$$p^0 = \frac{E}{c}, \quad \gamma = \left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2} \right)^{-1/2}, \quad \text{and} \quad E = mc^2 \gamma. \tag{1.22}$$

The space-components are the components of the three-dimensional momentum

$$\mathbf{p} = m\gamma \mathbf{v}. \tag{1.23}$$

A perfect fluid is defined to be a continuous distribution of matter with stress energy tensor T_{ab} of the form

$$T_{ab} = \rho u_a u_b + p(\eta_{ab} + u_a u_b), \tag{1.24}$$

where u^a is the 4-velocity of the fluid, ρ is the mass-energy density in the rest-frame of fluid, and p is the the pressure in the rest-frame of the fluid.

When there is no external forces, the equation of motion of a perfect fluid is simply

$$\partial^a T_{ab} = 0. \tag{1.25}$$

Consider $\partial^a T_{ab}$, we can write this in terms of ρ , p , and u^a as

$$\begin{aligned}
\partial^a T_{ab} &= \partial^a [\rho u_a u_b + p(\eta_{ab} + u_a u_b)] \\
&= (\partial^a \rho) u_a u_b + (\partial^a p)(\eta_{ab} + u_a u_b) \\
&\quad + (\rho + p)(\partial^a u_a) u_b + (\rho + p) u_a (\partial^a u_b) \\
&= [(u^a \partial_a \rho) + (\rho + p) \partial^a u_a] u_b \\
&\quad + [(\rho + p) u^a \partial_a u_b + \partial^a p (\eta_{ab} + u_a u_b)]
\end{aligned} \tag{1.26}$$

For equation (1.26) we can project the resulting equation parallel and perpendicular to u^b , we find:

$$[(u^a \partial_a \rho) + (\rho + p) \partial^a u_a] = 0, \tag{1.27}$$

$$[(\rho + p) u^a \partial_a u_b + \partial^a p (\eta_{ab} + u_a u_b)] = 0. \tag{1.28}$$

In the non-relativistic limit, when $p \ll \rho$, $u^\mu = (1, \vec{v})$, and $v \frac{dp}{dt} \ll |\vec{\nabla} p|$, equation (1.27) becomes,

$$\begin{aligned}
u^a \partial_a \rho + \rho \partial^a u_a &= 0 \\
\Rightarrow \partial_t \rho + \vec{v} \cdot \vec{\nabla} \rho + \rho \vec{\nabla} \cdot \vec{v} &= 0 \\
\Rightarrow \partial_t \rho + \vec{\nabla} \cdot (\rho \vec{v}) &= 0
\end{aligned} \tag{1.29}$$

and equation (1.28) becomes

$$\rho \left\{ \frac{\partial \vec{v}}{\partial t} + (\vec{v} \cdot \vec{\nabla}) \vec{v} \right\} = -\vec{\nabla} p \tag{1.30}$$

1.3.3 Relativistic hydrodynamics

Ordinary hydrodynamics is dealing with two basic equations [22]:

The equation of continuity

$$\partial_t \rho + \nabla \cdot (\rho \vec{v}) = 0 \tag{1.31}$$

This relates to the density and velocity of the fluid. It is equivalent to the conservation of mass.

The Euler equation is the fluid mechanics equivalent to Newton's second law, it relates the acceleration of a particle following the flow

$$\vec{a} = \frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{\partial \vec{v}}{\partial t} + (\vec{v} \cdot \vec{\nabla}) \vec{v} \quad (1.32)$$

We can write it in term of force density \vec{f} and mass density ρ :

$$\vec{a} = \frac{\partial \vec{v}}{\partial t} + (\vec{v} \cdot \vec{\nabla}) \vec{v} = \frac{\vec{f}}{\rho} \quad (1.33)$$

These laws have relativistic generalizations which are:

$$\nabla_a(\rho v^a) = 0 \quad (1.34)$$

$$A^a = V^b \nabla_b V^a \quad (1.35)$$

where A^a is now a 4-vector field of 4-accelerations.

The relativistic continuity equation yields

$$\frac{\partial(\rho \gamma)}{\partial t} = \nabla \cdot (\rho \gamma \vec{v}) \quad (1.36)$$

We interpret ρ as proportional to the number density of particles as measured by an observer moving with the fluid. Indeed, the γ factor is corresponding to the fact that Lorentz contraction “squashes” in the direction of motion, therefore, as seen by an observer moving with respect to the fluid the number density of particles is $\rho \gamma$.

Now for the 4-acceleration

$$A^i = (\gamma \partial_t + \gamma [\vec{v} \cdot \vec{\nabla}]) [\gamma v^i] \quad (1.37)$$

and

$$A^0 = (\gamma \partial_t + \gamma [\vec{v} \cdot \vec{\nabla}]) [\gamma] \quad (1.38)$$

The standard Newtonian results is reproduced at the low velocity, where $\gamma \rightarrow 1$.

The special theory of relativity only deals with flat spacetime and the motion of objects is usually treated in terms of Lorentz transformations and translations from inertial frame to another. The general theory of relativity extends it to deal with non-inertial frames, and via Einstein's equations with curved spacetimes as well. We need to understand the basic concepts of special relativity before turning to general relativity—as otherwise the mathematical constructions used in general relativity would appear rather unmotivated.

1.4 Conclusion

1.4.1 Postulational formulation of special relativity

There are two sets of postulates which are useful to generalize the general theory [19].

Postulate I. Space and time are represented by a 4-dimensional manifold provided with a symmetric affine connection, Γ^a_{bc} , and a metric tensor, g_{ab} , which is satisfied as follows:

- (i) g_{ab} is non-singular with signature $-+++$;
- (ii) $\nabla_c g_{ab} = 0$;
- (iii) $R^a_{bcd} = 0$.

The Postulate states that Γ^a_{bc} is the metric connection and that the metric is flat.

Postulate II. There exist privileged classes of curves in the manifold singled out as follows:

- (i) ideal clocks travel along timelike curves and measure the parameter τ defined by $d\tau^2 = -g_{ab} dx^a dx^b$;
- (ii) free particles travel along timelike geodesics;
- (iii) light rays travel along null geodesics.

The first part of the second postulate makes physical the distinction between space and time in the manifold. In Minkowski coordinates, it distinguishes the coordinate x^0 from the other three as the “time” coordinate. Furthermore, it states that the proper time τ which a clock measures is in accordance with the clock hypothesis. The rest of Postulate II singles out the privileged curves that free particles and light rays travel along.

1.4.2 The correspondence principle

Any new theory is consistent with any acceptable earlier theories within their range of validity. General relativity must agree on the one hand with special relativity in the absence of gravitation and on the other hand with Newtonian gravitational theory in the limit of weak gravitational fields and low velocities by comparing with the speed of light. This gives rise to a correspondence principle, as in figure (1.1), where arrows indicate directions of increased specialization.

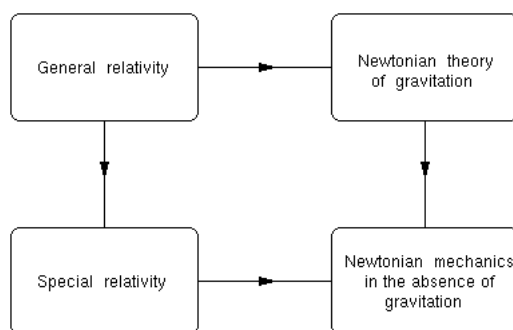


Figure 1.1: This structure shows the correspondence principle for general relativity.

1.4.3 Discussion

Special relativity is a physical theory published in 1905 by Albert Einstein [2]. The theory is a special case of Einstein’s theory of relativity where the effects of acceleration and of gravity can be ignored. Special relativity can be cast into an abstract geometrical form based on the use of a flat 4-manifold called Minkowski space. Indeed, most of this can easily be handled using high school algebra, however this is not necessarily the most useful way of doing things — especially when you then want to generalize to the curved spacetime of the general relativity. Most of the special

relativity, especially the foundations, can be adequately treated using matrix algebra [22].

The theory of special relativity asserts that spacetime is the manifold \mathbb{R}^4 with a flat metric of Lorentz signature defined on it. In special relativity, the principle of general covariance states that the spacetime metric, η_{ab} , is the only quantity relating to spacetime structure can appear in any physical laws. In addition, the laws of physics in special relativity satisfy the principle of special covariance with respect to the proper Poincaré transformation.

In special relativity, energy is described in terms of the “time component” of 4-vector p^a . The continuous matter distributions in special relativity are described by a symmetric tensor T_{ab} called the stress energy momentum tensor.

In this chapter we introduce the theory of special relativity, which deals with the motion of objects as seen from inertial frames. General relativity extends this to cover non-inertial frames as well. As the theory of general relativity relies on the theory of special relativity, we present the concept of special relativity first, so general relativity is easier to understand.

Chapter 2

Coordinate conditions in general relativity

2.1 Introduction

General relativity is a beautiful physical theory, invented for describing the gravitational field and the equations it obeys. General relativity is phrased in the language of differential geometry. It is by construction coordinate independent.

General relativity does not have a preferred coordinate system, and the coordinates must be constructed along with the spacetime. The mathematics and physics cannot depend on the particular choice of coordinate system you choose to place on the manifold. However, the choice of the coordinate system can be useful in other ways. It may simplify the mathematical calculation and the physics interpretation of what is going on.

For example, if the physics is time independent and spherically symmetric, it is extremely useful to choose a coordinate system that respects this property.

Reference [19] describes several coordinate conditions that we can consider to solve the vacuum field equations

$$G_{ab} = 0 \tag{2.1}$$

for g_{ab} . At first sight, the problem seems well posed. Indeed, there are 10 equations for the 10 unknowns g_{ab} . However, the equations are not independent, they are connected by 4 differential constraints through the contracted Bianchi identities

$$\nabla_b G^{ab} \equiv 0. \quad (2.2)$$

We therefore seem to have a problem of under-determinacy, when there are fewer equations than unknowns. We cannot expect complete determinacy for any set g_{ab} , since they can be transformed with fourfold freedom by a coordinate transformation:

$$X^a \rightarrow X'^a = X'^a(x) \quad (a = 0, 1, 2, 3). \quad (2.3)$$

In fact, we can use this coordinate freedom to impose four conditions on the g_{ab} . These are known as coordinate conditions or gauge conditions. We can give an example by introducing Gaussian normal coordinates in which

$$g_{00} \rightarrow +1, \quad g_{0i} \rightarrow 0 \quad (i = 1, 2, 3). \quad (2.4)$$

The remaining six unknowns $g_{\alpha\beta}$ can be determined by six independent equations in (1).

The assumption of spherical symmetry of a spacetime means that each event belongs to a two dimensional submanifold with spherical symmetry. This two dimensional submanifold can be given the metric

$$ds^2 = R^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2) \quad (2.5)$$

where θ and ϕ are the standard angular coordinates on the sphere. There must exist (at least locally) two additional coordinates t and r labelling the different spheres.

They can be chosen to be orthogonal to the sphere and also mutually orthogonal, t to be time-like and r space-like. The metric thus reads

$$g_{ik} = \text{diag}(-c^2 e^{2\phi}, e^{2\Lambda}, R^2, R^2 \sin^2 \theta) \quad (2.6)$$

where $\Lambda = \Lambda(r, t)$, $\phi = \phi(r, t)$ and $R = R(r, t)$. If $\frac{\partial R}{\partial r} \neq 0$, it is possible to rescale R to be identical with r . However, this special choice of the coordinate system need not always be useful in particular cases.

In general relativity, we express physics in terms of tensors. General relativity is a geometrical theory. Specifically, we will deal with a Riemannian manifold which defines a metric. We used the metric to define a distance and length (norm) of vectors. We have infinitesimal distance or interval which is defined as

$$(\mathrm{d}s)^2 = \mathrm{d}s^2 = g_{ab} \mathrm{d}x^a \mathrm{d}x^b \quad (2.7)$$

where, $\mathrm{d}s$ in (2.7) is called a “line element”, g_{ab} is called a metric form. In addition, g_{ab} is called “covariant” metric and it has an inverse of the form g^{ab} which is a “contravariant” metric.

2.2 Independent components: Riemann’s argument

The quick way to see how much we can get away with is to simply count the number of independent components of the metric tensor. In n dimensions, since the metric is a symmetric $T(0,2)$ tensor, it has $n(n+1)/2$ independent components. Since there are n coordinates, we can eliminate up to n of the metric components by suitably choosing our coordinates. This leaves

$$n(n+1)/2 - n = n(n-1)/2$$

true “independent” functions in the metric. This argument is due to Riemann.

The number of free components of the Riemann tensor is strictly limited by all symmetries when we deal with a [torsion-free] metric connexion.

2.2.1 For $n = 1$

If $n = 1$, then this implies there are zero truly independent components in the metric (see the proof below): In any 1-dimensional Riemann manifold we can always choose coordinates so that the metric is flat. (A space-time is said to be flat if $R^i_{jkl} = 0$ at every point in it.)

Proof.

$$ds^2 = f(x) dx^2 = g_{xx}(x) dx^2.$$

Let

$$y = \int \sqrt{f(x)} dx,$$

then

$$\frac{dy}{dx} = \sqrt{f(x)},$$

which implies

$$dy = \sqrt{f} dx.$$

So finally

$$dy^2 = f dx^2 = ds^2.$$

□

i.e. we always can choose a coordinate y such that $ds^2 = dy^2$ in any 1-dimension manifold

2.2.2 For $n = 2$

If $n = 2$, then this Riemann's argument implies there is exactly one truly independent component in the metric: In any 2-dimensional Riemann manifold it is a standard result that *locally* we can always choose coordinates to make the metric conformally flat.

Indeed, when $n = 2$ the Riemann tensor has only one independent component, essentially the Ricci Scalar, R . We have (in any coordinate system)

$$\begin{aligned} R_{abcd} &= \frac{1}{2} R (g_{ac} g_{bd} - g_{ad} g_{bc}) \\ R_{ab} &= \frac{1}{2} R g_{ab} \end{aligned}$$

Theorem: Any 2-dimensional Riemann manifold is locally conformally flat

$$g_{ij} = \exp[2\phi(x)] \delta_{ij}$$

2.2.3 For $n = 3$

If $n = 3$, then Riemann's argument implies there are exactly three truly independent components in the metric: In any 3-dimensional Riemann manifold it is a standard result (typically attributed to Darboux) that *locally* we can always choose coordinates to make the metric diagonal:

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} g_{11} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & g_{22} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & g_{33} \end{bmatrix}$$

That is, Riemann 3-manifolds have metric that are always locally diagonalizable. If $n = 3$, then the Riemann tensor has only six independent components, essentially R_{ab} . Indeed

$$R_{abcd} = -2\{g_{a[d}R_{c]b} + g_{b[c}R_{d]a}\} - R g_{a[c}g_{d]b} \quad (2.8)$$

That is

$$\begin{aligned} R_{abcd} &= \{g_{ac} R_{bd} + g_{bd} R_{ac} - g_{ad} R_{bc} - g_{bc} R_{ad}\} \\ &\quad - \frac{1}{2}R \{g_{ac} g_{bd} - g_{ad} g_{bc}\} \end{aligned} \quad (2.9)$$

2.2.4 For $n = 4$

If $n = 4$ Riemann's argument implies there are exactly six truly independent components in the metric. This means that for a generic manifold in $n = 4$ you *cannot* assert that

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} g_{11} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & g_{22} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & g_{33} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & g_{44} \end{bmatrix}$$

because this metric has too few free functions (four rather than six). So in general we cannot in 4 dimensions choose patches to make the metric patchwise diagonal. In local coordinate patches, there are often non-zero off-diagonal elements. For a truly

general metric there *must* be at least 2 off diagonal elements. For instance, it might be true that we can always set:

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} g_{11} & g_{12} & 0 & 0 \\ g_{12} & g_{22} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & g_{33} & g_{34} \\ 0 & 0 & g_{34} & g_{44} \end{bmatrix}$$

This at least has the correct counting properties, and it would be nice to know if this sort of thing is always possible. Another thing that can always be done *locally* in 4 dimensions is to set:

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & g_{22} & g_{23} & g_{24} \\ 0 & g_{23} & g_{33} & g_{34} \\ 0 & g_{24} & g_{34} & g_{44} \end{bmatrix}$$

This is called a Gaussian normal coordinate patch.

If $n = 4$ the Riemann tensor has only twenty independent components. Ten of them are the Ricci tensor R_{ab} and the other ten are hidden in the “Weyl tensor”.

$$C_{abcd} = R_{abcd} + \{g_{a[d}R_{c]b} + g_{b[c}R_{d]a}\} + \frac{1}{3}Rg_{a[c}g_{d]b} \quad (2.10)$$

That is

$$R_{abcd} = C_{abcd} + \frac{1}{2}\{g_{ac}R_{bd} + g_{bd}R_{ac} - g_{ad}R_{bc} - g_{bc}R_{ad}\} - \frac{1}{6}R\{g_{ac}g_{bd} - g_{ad}g_{bc}\} \quad (2.11)$$

2.3 Lorentzian manifolds

The Lorentz metric is used to formulate the free-space Maxwell equations in a 4-dimensional pseudo Riemann space and also used in describing mechanical phenomena in a mass-free Riemann space. The line element and metric are then assumed to be

$$\begin{aligned} ds^2 &= -(dx^0)^2 + (dx^1)^2 + (dx^2)^2 + (dx^3)^2 \\ &= -c^2 dt^2 + (dx^2 + dy^2 + dz^2) \end{aligned} \quad (2.12)$$

This particular metric tensor will be called the Lorentz metric tensor, and the corresponding metric, the Lorentz metric.

$$g_{ab} = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

The signature of a metric tensor is the number of positive and negative eigenvalues of the metric. That is, the corresponding real symmetric matrix is diagonalized, and the diagonal entries of each sign counted. If the matrix is $n \times n$, the possible number of positive signs may take any value p from 0 to n . Let $q = n - p$, then the signature may be denoted either by a pair of integers such as (p, q) , or as the bracketed sum $(p + q)$, or as an explicit list such as $-+++$, or even as the number $s = |p - q|$. (Unfortunately all of these different notations are in common use). A Lorentzian metric is one with signature $(p, 1) = (n - 1, 1)$ or sometimes $(1, q) = (1, n - 1)$. For a Lorentzian signature:

(0+1) dimension

For a Riemannian geometry in (0+1) dimensions, this is trivial to get Lorentzian geometry

$$g_{11} = -\exp[2\phi(t)]$$

(1+1) dimensions

For a Riemannian geometry in (2+0) dimensions we can always locally choose coordinates such that

$$g_{ij} = \exp[2\phi(t, x)] \delta_{ij}$$

For Lorentzian geometry in (1+1) dimensions this becomes

$$g_{ij} = \exp[2\phi(t, x)] \eta_{ij}$$

where

$$\eta_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 \\ 0 & +1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$g_{ij} = \exp[2\phi(t, x)] \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 \\ 0 & +1 \end{bmatrix}$$

so

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -\exp[2\phi(t, x)] & 0 \\ 0 & +\exp[2\phi(t, x)] \end{bmatrix}$$

We can find the Ricci scalar n in term of ϕ , its derivative, η , the Ricci tensor and Riemann tensor. The Ricci scalar is

$$R = - \frac{2 \left\{ - \left(\frac{d^2}{dx^2} \phi(t, x) \right) + \left(\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \phi(t, x) \right) \right\}}{\exp(2\phi(t, x))} \quad (2.13)$$

And we can calculate the Ricci tensor, its non-zero components are:

$$R_{11} = - \left(\frac{d^2}{dx^2} \phi(t, x) \right) + \left(\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \phi(t, x) \right) \quad (2.14)$$

$$R_{22} = \left(\frac{d^2}{dx^2} \phi(t, x) \right) - \left(\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \phi(t, x) \right) \quad (2.15)$$

Similarly, we can calculate the Riemann tensor, its non-zero components are:

$$R_{1212} = - \exp(2\phi(t, x)) \left(- \left(\frac{d^2}{dx^2} \phi(t, x) \right) + \left(\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \phi(t, x) \right) \right) \quad (2.16)$$

In Lorentzian geometry, it is possible to make another coordinate choice by setting

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -[1 - v^2] & -v \\ -v & +1 \end{bmatrix}$$

where $v = v(t, x)$, so

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -[1 - v(t, x)^2] & -v(t, x) \\ -v(t, x) & +1 \end{bmatrix}$$

In terms of this coordinate system we have: The Ricci scalar is

$$R = -2 \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial t} v(t, x) \right) - 2 \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} v(t, x) \right)^2 - 2v(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} v(t, x) \right) \quad (2.17)$$

And we can calculate the Ricci tensor, its non-zero components are:

$$R_{11} = -(-1 + v(t, x))^2 \left\{ \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial t} v(t, x) \right) + \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} v(t, x) \right)^2 + v(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} v(t, x) \right) \right\} \quad (2.18)$$

$$R_{12} = v(t, x) \left\{ \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial t} v(t, x) \right) + \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} v(t, x) \right)^2 + v(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} v(t, x) \right) \right\} \quad (2.19)$$

$$R_{22} = - \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial t} v(t, x) \right) - \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} v(t, x) \right)^2 - v(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} v(t, x) \right) \quad (2.20)$$

Similary, we can calculate the Riemann tensor, its non-zero components are:

$$R_{1212} = - \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial t} v(t, x) \right) - \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} v(t, x) \right)^2 - v(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} v(t, x) \right) \quad (2.21)$$

(2+1) dimensions

The simplest special coordinate patch that it is always possible to set up yields

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -h_0^2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & h_1^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & h_2^2 \end{bmatrix},$$

where $h_i = h_i(t, x, y)$, so

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -h_0(t, x, y)^2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & h_1(t, x, y)^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & h_2(t, x, y)^2 \end{bmatrix}.$$

Alternatively we can always locally set up patches of the form

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -[N^2 - v^2] & v_1 & v_2 \\ v_1 & 1 & 0 \\ v_2 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

where $v_i = v_i(t, x, y)$, $N = N(t, x, y)$, $v^2 = v_1^2 + v_2^2$.

So the metric is

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -[N(t, x, y)^2 - (v_1^2(t, x, y) + v_2^2(t, x, y))] & v_1(t, x, y) & v_2(t, x, y) \\ v_1(t, x, y) & 1 & 0 \\ v_2(t, x, y) & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Coordinate patches of this type are called Painlevé–Gullstrand coordinates. Another alternative, in (2+1) dimensions, is that we can always locally set up patches of the form

$$g_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -[1 - v^2] & v_1 & v_2 \\ v_1 & \exp[2\phi] & 0 \\ v_2 & 0 & \exp[2\phi] \end{bmatrix}$$

where $\phi = \phi(t, x, y)$, $v^2 = \exp[-2\phi] (v_1^2 + v_2^2)$.

The inverse metric is then:

$$g^{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & v_1 \exp[-2\phi] & v_2 \exp[-2\phi] \\ v_1 \exp[-2\phi] & (\exp[2\phi] - v_1^2) \exp[-4\phi] & -v_1 v_2 \exp[-4\phi] \\ v_2 \exp[-2\phi] & -v_1 v_2 \exp[-4\phi] & (\exp[2\phi] - v_2^2) \exp[-4\phi] \end{bmatrix}$$

In (2+1) dimensions we can calculate the Ricci scalar, the Ricci tensor and the Riemann tensor. However, all results are too complex to analyze in detail.

(3+1) dimensions

This is the physically interesting case, and this is the case that will be most difficult to analyze in detail, and the remainder of the Chapter is devoted to this case.

2.4 The block diagonal ansatz

- It is certainly true that we can always locally set:

$$g_{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{cc|cc} g_{11} & g_{12} & 0 & 0 \\ g_{12} & g_{22} & 0 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & 0 & g_{33} & g_{34} \\ 0 & 0 & g_{34} & g_{44} \end{array} \right]$$

- This at least has the correct counting properties.

Now we can take the above as an *ansatz* and calculate the Ricci tensor, and then the Einstein tensor, respectively.

Specifically, We write the four coordinates as $x^\mu = (y^a, z^i)$, with

$$x^1 = y^1; \quad x^2 = y^2; \quad x^3 = z^1; \quad x^4 = z^2.$$

Then

$$g_{\mu\nu}(x) = g_{\mu\nu}(y, z) = \left[\begin{array}{cc|cc} g_{11}(y, z) & g_{12}(y, z) & 0 & 0 \\ g_{12}(y, z) & g_{22}(y, z) & 0 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & 0 & g_{33}(y, z) & g_{34}(y, z) \\ 0 & 0 & g_{34}(y, z) & g_{44}(y, z) \end{array} \right]$$

That is

$$g_{\mu\nu}(y, z) = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} h_{ab}(y, z) & 0 \\ \hline 0 & f_{ij}(y, z) \end{array} \right]$$

This means the 4 dimensional metric has split up into four 2×2 blocks, two of them trivial (zero). This will make the Ricci tensor relatively easy to calculate.

The inverse tensor is very simple

$$g^{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} h^{ab}(y, z) & 0 \\ \hline 0 & f^{ij}(y, z) \end{array} \right]$$

where h^{ab} and f^{ij} are two dimensional inverses of the two 2×2 matrices h_{ab} and f_{ij} .

For definiteness, we assume the h subspace has signature (1+1) [one time direction plus one space direction] while the f subspace has signature (2+0) [two space directions]. But this subtle point does not really affect the subsequent analysis.

The Christoffel symbols can be computed from

$$\Gamma^\mu_{\sigma\rho}(y, z) = g^{\mu\nu} \left\{ g_{\nu(\sigma, \rho)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{\sigma\rho, \nu} \right\} \quad (2.22)$$

and now we can spilt them up into little 2×2 blocks

$$\Gamma^\mu_{\sigma\rho}(y, z) = \left[\begin{array}{cc|cc} \Gamma^\mu_{11}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{12}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{13}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{14}(y, z) \\ \Gamma^\mu_{12}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{22}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{23}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{24}(y, z) \\ \hline \Gamma^\mu_{13}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{23}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{33}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{34}(y, z) \\ \Gamma^\mu_{14}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{24}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{34}(y, z) & \Gamma^\mu_{44}(y, z) \end{array} \right]$$

Some of these blocks should have a simple interpretation in terms of the Christoffel symbols of the 2 dimensional metrics h_{ab} and f_{ij} .

For example

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma^a_{bc}(y, z) &= g^{a\nu} \left\{ g_{\nu(b,c)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{bc,\nu} \right\} = g^{ad} \left\{ g_{d(b,c)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{bc,d} \right\} \\ &= h^{ad} \left\{ h_{d(b,c)} - \frac{1}{2} h_{bc,d} \right\} = [\Gamma(h)]^a_{bc}(y, z).\end{aligned}\quad (2.23)$$

That is, this portion of the 4 dimensional Christoffel symbol can be calculated simply by looking at the 2 dimensional Christoffel symbol corresponding to the two dimensional metric h_{ab} . Similarly, we can calculate this:

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma^i_{jk}(y, z) &= g^{i\nu} \left\{ g_{\nu(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jk,\nu} \right\} = g^{il} \left\{ g_{l(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jk,l} \right\} \\ &= h^{il} \left\{ h_{l(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} h_{jk,l} \right\} = [\Gamma(f)]^i_{jk}(y, z).\end{aligned}\quad (2.24)$$

The complications of course come with the other pieces, such as

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma^i_{bc}(y, z) &= g^{i\nu} \left\{ g_{\nu(b,c)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{bc,\nu} \right\} = f^{ij} \left\{ g_{j(b,c)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{bc,j} \right\} \\ &= f^{ij} \left\{ 0 - \frac{1}{2} h_{bc,j} \right\} = -\frac{1}{2} f^{ij} h_{bc,j}.\end{aligned}\quad (2.25)$$

Similarly, and we can calculate this:

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma^a_{jk}(y, z) &= g^{a\nu} \left\{ g_{\nu(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jk,\nu} \right\} = h^{ab} \left\{ g_{b(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jk,b} \right\} \\ &= h^{ab} \left\{ 0 - \frac{1}{2} f_{jk,b} \right\} = -\frac{1}{2} h^{ab} f_{jk,b}.\end{aligned}\quad (2.26)$$

This part of the 4-dimensional Christoffel symbol is rather simple but does not have a simple interpretation in terms of the 2 dimensional sub-geometries.

There are four other sub-blocks to calculate:

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma^a_{bk}(y, z) &= g^{a\nu} \left(g_{\nu(b,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{bk,\nu} \right) = g^{ac} \left(g_{c(b,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{bk,c} \right) \\ &= g^{ac} \left(\frac{1}{2} g_{cb,k} + \frac{1}{2} g_{ck,b} - \frac{1}{2} g_{bk,c} \right) = h^{ac} \left(\frac{1}{2} h_{cb,k} \right) = \frac{1}{2} h^{ac} h_{cb,k}\end{aligned}\quad (2.27)$$

Whence

$$\Gamma^a_{jc}(y, z) = \frac{1}{2} h^{ab} h_{bc,j} \quad (2.28)$$

Similarly

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma^i_{jc}(y, z) &= g^{i\nu} \left(g_{\nu(j,c)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jc,\nu} \right) = g^{ik} \left(g_{k(j,c)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jc,k} \right) \\ &= g^{ik} \left(\frac{1}{2} g_{kj,c} + \frac{1}{2} g_{kc,j} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jc,k} \right) = f^{ik} \left(\frac{1}{2} f_{kj,c} \right) = \frac{1}{2} f^{ik} f_{jk,c} \end{aligned} \quad (2.29)$$

Whence

$$\Gamma^i_{bk}(y, z) = \frac{1}{2} f^{ij} f_{jk,b} \quad (2.30)$$

Various symmetries should make all four of these results obvious once any *one* of them has been calculated.

2.4.1 Collected results for the connexion

There are a total of 8 sub-blocks to deal with:

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma^a_{bc}(y, z) &= [\Gamma(h)]^a_{bc}(y, z). \\ \Gamma^i_{jk}(y, z) &= [\Gamma(f)]^i_{jk}(y, z). \\ \Gamma^i_{bc}(y, z) &= -\frac{1}{2} f^{ij} h_{bc,j}. \\ \Gamma^a_{jk}(y, z) &= -\frac{1}{2} h^{ab} f_{jk,b}. \\ \Gamma^a_{bk}(y, z) &= \frac{1}{2} h^{ac} h_{cb,k}. \\ \Gamma^a_{jc}(y, z) &= \frac{1}{2} h^{ab} h_{bc,j}. \\ \Gamma^i_{jc}(y, z) &= \frac{1}{2} f^{ik} f_{jk,c}. \\ \Gamma^i_{bk}(y, z) &= \frac{1}{2} f^{ij} f_{jk,b}. \end{aligned}$$

2.4.2 Back to the Ricci tensor: qualitative results

Once we have all eight sub-blocks, we have the entire 4 dimensional Christoffel symbol.

The Ricci tensor of $g_{\mu\nu}$ can then be calculated from [17], page 224

$$R_{\mu\nu} = \Gamma^\sigma_{\mu\nu,\sigma} - \Gamma^\sigma_{\mu\sigma,\nu} + \Gamma^\sigma_{\rho\sigma} \Gamma^\rho_{\mu\nu} - \Gamma^\rho_{\sigma\mu} \Gamma^\sigma_{\rho\nu}. \quad (2.31)$$

- It is convenient to first calculate $\Gamma^\sigma_{\rho\sigma}$

In fact, it is a standard result that

$$\Gamma^\sigma_{\rho\sigma} = (\ln \sqrt{-g})_{,\rho} = \frac{1}{2} \frac{g_{,a}}{g} \quad (2.32)$$

(see, for instance, equation (8.51a) on page 222 of [17]). Then we can simplify:

$$R_{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}} (\sqrt{-g} \Gamma^\sigma_{\mu\nu})_{,\sigma} - (\ln \sqrt{-g})_{,\mu\nu} - \Gamma^\rho_{\sigma\mu} \Gamma^\sigma_{\rho\nu}, \quad (2.33)$$

(see, for instance, equation (8.51b) on page 222 of [17]). This is the explicit formula for the Ricci tensor.

To interpret the Ricci tensor, write it in 2×2 sub-blocks

$$R_{\mu\nu}(y, z) = \left[\begin{array}{cc|cc} R_{11}(y, z) & R_{12}(y, z) & R_{13}(y, z) & R_{14}(y, z) \\ R_{12}(y, z) & R_{22}(y, z) & R_{23}(y, z) & R_{24}(y, z) \\ \hline R_{13}(y, z) & R_{23}(y, z) & R_{33}(y, z) & R_{34}(y, z) \\ R_{14}(y, z) & R_{24}(y, z) & R_{34}(y, z) & R_{44}(y, z) \end{array} \right]$$

That is

$$R_{\mu\nu}(y, z) = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} R_{ab}(y, z) & R_{ai}(y, z) \\ \hline R_{jb}(y, z) & R_{ij}(y, z) \end{array} \right]$$

Some of these blocks should have a simple interpretation in terms of the Ricci tensor of the 2 dimensional metrics h_{ab} and f_{ij} . For instance we expect

$$[R(g)]_{ab} = [R(h)]_{ab} + ???$$

$$[R(g)]_{ij} = [R(f)]_{ij} + ???$$

where the extra terms (the ???) involve y derivatives of f and z derivatives of h . That is, we expect the full 4 dimensional Ricci tensor of these particular 2×2 sub-blocks

to be related to the Ricci tensors of the 2 dimensional metrics f and h , but with some additional terms.

For the off-diagonal block

$$[R(g)]_{ia} = ???$$

It will probably involve y derivatives of f and z derivatives of h .

Once you have the Ricci tensor, the Ricci scalar is easy

$$R(g) = g^{\mu\nu} R_{\mu\nu} = h^{ab} R_{ab} + f^{ij} R_{ij} = R(h) + ??? + R(f) + ???$$

That is

$$R(g) = R(h) + R(f) + ???$$

That is, we expect the full 4 dimensional Ricci scalar to be related to the sum of the Ricci tensors of the 2 dimensional metrics f and h , but with some additional terms.

Then for the four dimensional Einstein tensor

$$G_{\mu\nu} = R_{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{2} R g_{\mu\nu} \quad (2.34)$$

we can sub-divide the 2×2 sub blocks as

$$[G(g)]_{ab} = [G(h)]_{ab} - \frac{1}{2} R(f) h_{ab} + ???$$

$$[G(g)]_{ij} = [G(f)]_{ij} - \frac{1}{2} R(g) f_{ij} + ???$$

But the Einstein tensor of any two dimensional manifold is zero; this is one of the special features of two dimensions, so

$$[G(h)]_{ab} = 0 = [G(f)]_{ij}$$

and we have

$$[G(g)]_{ab} = -\frac{1}{2} R(f) h_{ab} + ???$$

$$[G(g)]_{ij} = -\frac{1}{2} R(g) f_{ij} + ???$$

Finally, for the off-diagonal

$$[G(g)]_{aj} = [R(g)]_{aj} = ???$$

Of course it is all these ??? pieces that give the important mathematics and physics. Again, we are not really sure what to expect, they will probably involve y derivatives of f and z derivatives of h .

2.4.3 Calculating the Ricci tensor - diagonal pieces

Start from the general expression for the Ricci tensor of the metric $g_{\mu\nu}$:

$$R_{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}} \left(\sqrt{-g} \Gamma^\sigma_{\mu\nu} \right)_{,\sigma} - \left(\ln \sqrt{-g} \right)_{,\mu\nu} - \Gamma^\rho_{\sigma\mu} \Gamma^\sigma_{\rho\nu}. \quad (2.35)$$

Note that, since the metric is block diagonal,

$$g = \det[g_{\mu\nu}] = \det[h_{ab}] \det[f_{ij}] = h f. \quad (2.36)$$

Now consider

$$[R(g)]_{ab} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}} \left(\sqrt{-g} \Gamma^\sigma_{ab} \right)_{,\sigma} - \left(\ln \sqrt{-g} \right)_{,ab} - \Gamma^\rho_{\sigma a} \Gamma^\sigma_{\rho b} \quad (2.37)$$

which we expand as

$$\begin{aligned} [R(g)]_{ab} &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} \left(\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^c_{ab} \right)_{,c} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} \left(\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^k_{ab} \right)_{,k} - \left(\ln \sqrt{-h} f \right)_{,ab} \\ &\quad - \Gamma^c_{da} \Gamma^d_{cb} - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{cb} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{jb} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{jb} \end{aligned}$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} [R(g)]_{ab} &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h}} \left(\sqrt{-h} \Gamma^c_{ab} \right)_{,c} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{f_{,c}}{f} \Gamma^c_{ab} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} \left(\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^k_{ab} \right)_{,k} \\ &\quad - \left(\ln \sqrt{-h} \right)_{,ab} - \left(\ln \sqrt{f} \right)_{,ab} \\ &\quad - \Gamma^c_{da} \Gamma^d_{cb} - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{cb} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{jb} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{jb} \end{aligned}$$

which we regroup as

$$\begin{aligned} [R(g)]_{ab} &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h}} \left(\sqrt{-h} \Gamma^c_{ab} \right)_{,c} - \left(\ln \sqrt{-h} \right)_{,ab} - \Gamma^c_{da} \Gamma^d_{cb} \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{2} \frac{f_{,c}}{f} \Gamma^c_{ab} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} \left(\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^k_{ab} \right)_{,k} - \left(\ln \sqrt{f} \right)_{,ab} \\ &\quad - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{cb} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{jb} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{jb} \end{aligned} \quad (2.38)$$

But the first line is just $[R(h)]_{ab}$, the 2-dimensional Ricci tensor calculated using the 2-metric h_{ab} . The other terms can be slightly rearranged as

$$\begin{aligned} [R(g)]_{ab} &= [R(h)]_{ab} - \frac{1}{2} \left\{ (\ln f)_{,ab} - \frac{f_{,c}}{f} \Gamma^c_{ab} \right\} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} \left(\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^k_{ab} \right)_{,k} \\ &\quad - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{cb} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{jb} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{jb} \end{aligned} \quad (2.39)$$

Now use colons : to denote 2-dimensional covariant derivatives using the 2-metric h .
Then

$$\begin{aligned} [R(g)]_{ab} &= [R(h)]_{ab} - \frac{1}{2} (\ln f)_{:ab} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{h_{,k}}{h} \Gamma^k_{ab} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{f}} \left(\sqrt{f} \Gamma^k_{ab} \right)_{,k} \\ &\quad - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{cb} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{jb} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{jb} \end{aligned} \quad (2.40)$$

Now we start to insert the various pieces.

Note that

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{f}} \left(\sqrt{f} \Gamma^k_{ab} \right)_{,k} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{f}} \left(\sqrt{f} f^{kj} \partial_j h_{ab} \right)_{,k} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{f}} \left(\sqrt{f} f^{ij} \partial_i h_{ab} \right)_{,j}$$

We can write this more compactly as

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{f}} \left(\sqrt{f} \Gamma^k_{ab} \right)_{,k} = -\frac{1}{2} \Delta_f h_{ab} \quad (2.41)$$

where by Δ_f we mean the two-dimensional Laplacian in the f subspace, treating the h indices as though they were scalars.

Also note that

$$\Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{jb} = \frac{1}{4} f^{jm} f_{mk,a} f^{kn} f_{nj,b} \quad (2.42)$$

which we can re-write as

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{jb} &= \frac{1}{4} f^{ij} f_{jk,a} f^{kl} f_{li,b} \\ &= \frac{1}{4} \text{tr} [\mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,a} \mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,b}] \end{aligned} \quad (2.43)$$

Next, we start looking at

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{cb} &= -\frac{1}{4} (h^{cd} h_{da,k}) (f^{kj} h_{bc,j}) \\ &= -\frac{1}{4} h^{cd} (h_{ad,i} f^{ij} h_{bc,j}) \end{aligned} \quad (2.44)$$

Similarly,

$$\Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{jb} = -\frac{1}{4} h^{cd} (h_{ad,i} f^{ij} h_{bc,j}) \quad (2.45)$$

Finally

$$\frac{h_{,k}}{h} \Gamma^k_{ab} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{h_{,i}}{h} f^{ij} h_{ab,j} \quad (2.46)$$

Now pull all these pieces together. We get

$$\begin{aligned}
[R(g)]_{ab} &= [R(h)]_{ab} - \frac{1}{2} (\ln f)_{:ab} - \frac{1}{2} \Delta_f h_{ab} - \frac{1}{4} \text{tr} [\mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,a} \mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,b}] \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{4} \frac{h_{,i}}{h} f^{ij} h_{ab,j} + \frac{1}{2} h^{cd} (h_{ad,i} f^{ij} h_{bc,j})
\end{aligned} \tag{2.47}$$

There are still simplifications we could make. For instance

$$(\ln f)_{:ab} = \left(\frac{f_{:a}}{f} \right)_{,b} = \frac{f_{:ab}}{f} - \frac{f_{:a}}{f} \frac{f_{:b}}{f} \tag{2.48}$$

Using this we get rid of the logarithm. Then finally

$$\begin{aligned}
[R(g)]_{ab} &= [R(h)]_{ab} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{f_{:ab}}{f} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{f_{:a}}{f} \frac{f_{:b}}{f} - \frac{1}{2} \Delta_f h_{ab} - \frac{1}{4} \text{tr} [\mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,a} \mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,b}] \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{4} \frac{h_{,i}}{h} f^{ij} h_{ab,j} + \frac{1}{2} h^{cd} (h_{ad,i} f^{ij} h_{bc,j})
\end{aligned} \tag{2.49}$$

For $[R(g)]_{ij}$ we can appeal to symmetry to simply write:

$$\begin{aligned}
[R(g)]_{ij} &= [R(f)]_{ij} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{h_{|ij}}{h} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{h_{|i}}{h} \frac{h_{|j}}{h} - \frac{1}{2} \Delta_h f_{ij} - \frac{1}{4} \text{tr} [\mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,i} \mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,j}] \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{4} \frac{f_{,a}}{f} h^{ab} f_{ij,a} + \frac{1}{2} f^{kl} (f_{ik,a} h^{ab} f_{jl,b})
\end{aligned} \tag{2.50}$$

The vertical bar $|$ now denotes 2-dimensional covariant derivatives in the f direction, treating the h indices as scalars.

To obtain the Ricci scalar we note

$$\begin{aligned}
h^{ab} [R(g)]_{ab} &= h^{ab} [R(h)]_{ab} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{\Delta_h f}{f} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{f_{:a}}{f} \frac{f_{:a}}{f} - \frac{1}{2} h^{ab} \Delta_f h_{ab} - \frac{1}{4} h^{ab} \text{tr} [\mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,a} \mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,b}] \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{4} \frac{h_{|i}}{h} \frac{h^{|i}}{h} + \frac{1}{2} f^{ij} \text{tr} [\mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,i} \mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,j}]
\end{aligned} \tag{2.51}$$

with a similar formula holding for $h^{ij} [R(g)]_{ij}$:

$$\begin{aligned}
f^{ij} [R(g)]_{ij} &= f^{ij} [R(f)]_{ij} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{\Delta_f h}{h} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{h_{|i}}{h} \frac{h^{|i}}{h} - \frac{1}{2} f^{ij} \Delta_h f_{ij} - \frac{1}{4} f^{ij} \text{tr} [\mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,i} \mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,j}] \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{4} \frac{f_{|a}}{f} \frac{f^{|a}}{f} + \frac{1}{2} h^{ab} \text{tr} [\mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,a} \mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,b}]
\end{aligned} \tag{2.52}$$

Then in the Ricci scalar there are a lot of partial cancellations

$$\begin{aligned}
R(g) &= h^{ab} [R(g)]_{ab} + f^{ij} [R(g)]_{ij} \\
&= R(h) + R(g) - \frac{1}{2} \frac{\Delta_h f}{f} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{\Delta_f h}{h} + \frac{1}{4} \frac{f_{;a}}{f} \frac{f^{;a}}{f} + \frac{1}{4} \frac{h_{|i}}{h} \frac{h^{||i}}{h} \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{2} h^{ab} \Delta_f h_{ab} - \frac{1}{2} f^{ij} \Delta_h f_{ij} \\
&\quad + \frac{1}{4} h^{ab} \text{tr} [\mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,a} \mathbf{f}^{-1} \mathbf{f}_{,b}] + \frac{1}{4} f^{ij} \text{tr} [\mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,i} \mathbf{h}^{-1} \mathbf{h}_{,j}]
\end{aligned} \tag{2.53}$$

2.4.4 Off-diagonal part of the Ricci tensor

Now we consider what we can say about the off-diagonal piece $[R(g)]_{ai}$. Again we will want to start from the general formula for the Ricci tensor of the metric $g_{\mu\nu}$:

$$R_{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}} (\sqrt{-g} \Gamma^\sigma_{\mu\nu})_{,\sigma} - (\ln \sqrt{-g})_{,\mu\nu} - \Gamma^\rho_{\sigma\mu} \Gamma^\sigma_{\rho\nu}.$$

Now consider

$$[R(g)]_{ai} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}} (\sqrt{-g} \Gamma^\sigma_{ai})_{,\sigma} - (\ln \sqrt{-g})_{,ai} - \Gamma^\rho_{\sigma a} \Gamma^\sigma_{\rho i} \tag{2.54}$$

which we expand as

$$\begin{aligned}
[R(g)]_{ai} &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} (\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^c_{ai})_{,c} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} (\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^k_{ab})_{,k} - (\ln \sqrt{-h} f)_{,ai} \\
&\quad - \Gamma^c_{da} \Gamma^d_{ci} - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{ci} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{ji} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{ji}
\end{aligned}$$

That is

$$\begin{aligned}
[R(g)]_{ai} &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} (\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^c_{ai})_{,c} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h} f} (\sqrt{-h} f \Gamma^k_{ab})_{,k} \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{2} (\ln(-h))_{,ai} - \frac{1}{2} (\ln(f))_{,ai} \\
&\quad - \Gamma^c_{da} \Gamma^d_{ci} - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{ci} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{ji} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{ji}
\end{aligned} \tag{2.55}$$

So that

$$\begin{aligned}
[R(g)]_{ai} &= -\frac{1}{2} (\ln(f))_{,ai} + \frac{1}{2} (\ln(f))_{,b} \Gamma^b_{ai} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h}} (\sqrt{-h} \Gamma^b_{ai})_{,b} \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{2} (\ln(-h))_{,ai} + \frac{1}{2} (\ln(-h))_{,j} \Gamma^j_{ai} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{f}} (\sqrt{f} \Gamma^j_{ay})_{,j} \\
&\quad - \Gamma^c_{da} \Gamma^d_{ci} - \Gamma^c_{ka} \Gamma^k_{ci} - \Gamma^j_{ka} \Gamma^k_{ji} - \Gamma^j_{da} \Gamma^d_{ji}
\end{aligned} \tag{2.56}$$

Now consider

$$\Gamma^b_{ai:b} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-h}} \partial_b \left(\sqrt{-h} \Gamma^b_{ai} \right) - \Gamma^c_{ab} \left(\Gamma^b_{ci} \right) \quad (2.57)$$

Here Γ^b_{ai} is treated as though it were a T^1_1 tensor with respect to the h subspace, the i index [which lies in the f subspace] is treated as though this quantity were a scalar with respect to coordinate transformations in the f subspace. This notation, together with the analogous

$$\Gamma^j_{ia|j} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{f}} \partial_j \left(\sqrt{f} \Gamma^j_{ia} \right) - \Gamma^k_{ij} \left(\Gamma^j_{ka} \right) \quad (2.58)$$

allows us to simplify the off-diagonal Ricci tensor as:

$$\begin{aligned} [R(g)]_{ai} &= \Gamma^b_{ai:b} + \Gamma^j_{ia|j} - \frac{1}{2} (f_{,a}/f)_{,i} - \frac{1}{2} (h_{,i}/h)_{,a} \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{2} (f_{,b}/f) \Gamma^b_{ai} + \frac{1}{2} (h_{,j}/h) \Gamma^j_{ai} - \frac{1}{2} h_{ac,l} h^{cd} f^{lj} f_{ji,d} \end{aligned} \quad (2.59)$$

To simplify things, we can define two tensors by

$$K_{abi} = -\frac{1}{2} h_{ab,i} = -\frac{1}{2} h_{ab|i} \quad (2.60)$$

$$L_{ija} = -\frac{1}{2} f_{ij,a} = -\frac{1}{2} h_{ij:a} \quad (2.61)$$

with the convention that the $abc\dots$ indices are raised and lowered using h , and the $ijk\dots$ indices are raised and lowered using f .

(The reason for this notation is that these quantities are some sort of generalization of the notion of extrinsic curvature.)

With these conventions we have:

$$\Gamma^a_{bc}(y, z) = [\Gamma(h)]^a_{bc}(y, z).$$

$$\Gamma^i_{jk}(y, z) = [\Gamma(f)]^i_{jk}(y, z).$$

$$\Gamma^i_{bc}(y, z) = K_{bc}{}^i.$$

$$\Gamma^a_{jk}(y, z) = L_{jk}{}^a.$$

$$\Gamma^a_{bk}(y, z) = -K^a{}_{bk}.$$

$$\Gamma^a_{jc}(y, z) = -K^a{}_{cj}.$$

$$\Gamma^i_{jc}(y, z) = -L^i{}_{jc}.$$

$$\Gamma^i_{bk}(y, z) = -L^i{}_{kb}.$$

Which then implies

$$\begin{aligned}
R_{ai} = & -K^b_{ai:b} + K^b_{bi:a} - L^j_{ia|j} + L^j_{ja|i} \\
& - \frac{1}{2} \frac{f_{,b}}{f} K^b_{ai} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{h_{,j}}{f} L K^j_{ia} - 2 K_{ac}{}^j L_{ji}{}^c
\end{aligned} \tag{2.62}$$

2.4.5 Discussion

This form of the metric is physically interesting because there is a good chance that it really is general for 4 dimensional spacetime, and general enough to encode the Kerr metric for a rotating black hole.

For this chapter we simply counted the number of independent components of the metric tensor. In 1-dimension, there are zero truly independent components in the metric. Furthermore, in any 1-dimensional Riemann manifold we are able to choose the coordinates to make the metric flat. For 2-dimensions, Riemann's argument implies that there is only one truly independent component in the metric. Indeed, any 2-dimensional Riemann manifold has a standard result that locally, we can choose coordinates to make the metric conformally flat. The Riemann tensor also has one independent component, essentially the Ricci scalar, R . In addition, for $n = 3$, then Riemann's argument implies that there are exactly three truly independent components in the metric. The Riemann 3-manifolds have metrics that are always locally diagonalizable. For $n = 4$, the Riemann tensor has only twenty independent components. Ten of them are the Ricci tensor R_{ab} , while the other ten are hidden in the "Weyl tensor".

We use the Lorentz metric to formulate the free-space Maxwell equations in a 4-dimensional Riemann space, and to describe mechanical phenomena in a vacuum Riemann space. It is trivial to get a Lorentzian geometry from a Riemannian geometry in (0+1) dimensions. For a Riemannian geometry in (1+1) dimensions we are able to find the Ricci scalar, the Ricci tensor and the Riemann tensor. While, for a Riemannian geometry in (2+1) dimensions it is more complicated to calculate the Ricci scalar, Ricci tensor and Riemann tensor.

The case for (3+1) dimensions is physically interesting, but it is the most difficult to analyze in detail. However, we are able to calculate the Ricci tensor and Einstein

tensor in the 4 dimensional metric. We split the metric into four 2×2 blocks, two of them trivial (zero), which allows us to calculate the Ricci tensor easily. Furthermore, the Christoffel symbols can be computed from equation (2.22). For the 4-dimensional Christoffel symbol, there is a total of 8 sub-blocks to deal with (see section (2.4.1)). Now we are able to calculate the Ricci tensor of $g_{\mu\nu}$ from equation (2.31). We expect the full 4 dimensional Ricci tensor to be related to the sum of the Ricci tensors of the 2 dimensional metrics f and h , with some additional terms. In addition, we can calculate the 4 dimensional Einstein tensor from equation (2.34). This is useful as a way of looking for nice new solutions of the Einstein equations.

2.5 The ADM (Arnowitt-Deser-Misner) ansatz

Both ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza–Klein) decompositions seek to split “spacetime” into “space” plus “time” in some sort of natural way, and then use this split to describe spacetime curvature in terms of the curvature of space and some additional structure.

In addition, this decomposes the four-metric of spacetime as a time-varying three-metric on a three-dimensional domain together with the lapse and shift, which are scalar-valued and three-vector-valued functions of time and space, respectively.

2.5.1 ADM Decomposition

Definition 1. *In the case of the ADM decomposition one takes*

$$g_{ab} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -[c^2 - v^2] & -v_j \\ \hline -v_i & h_{ij} \end{array} \right]$$

Notation: *Latin indices from the beginning of the alphabet (a, b, c, \dots) run from 0-3 and refer to space-time; Latin indices from the middle of the alphabet (i, j, k, \dots) run from 1-3 and refer to space. We use $X_{;a}$ to denote a space-time covariant derivative and $X_{;i}$ to denote a three-space covariant derivative.*

Interpretation: The light cones, defined by $ds^2 = g_{ab} dx^a dx^b = 0$ take the form

$$h_{ij} (dx^i - v^i dt) (dx^j - v^j dt) = c^2 dt^2$$

Here h_{ij} is the 3-metric of space. We take

$$h^{ij} = [h_{ij}]^{-1}$$

to be the inverse 3-metric, and

$$v^2 = h^{ij} v_i v_j = h_{ij} v^i v^j$$

Then v^i is the 3-velocity of a coordinate system with respect to which c is the “coordinate speed of light”. (Note that in comparison to usual conventions v_i is *minus* the “shift vector”, while c is equal to the “lapse function”.)

We are able to calculate the inverse metric:

$$g^{ab} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -1/c^2 & v^j/c^2 \\ \hline -v^i/c^2 & h^{ij} - v^i v^j / c^2 \end{array} \right]$$

Note that 3 contravariant vectors that point in the “space” directions are

$$X^a = (0; 1, 0, 0), \quad Y^a = (0; 0, 1, 0), \quad \text{and} \quad Z^a = (0; 0, 0, 1).$$

So if we want \mathbf{n} to be a vector that is “orthogonal” to space, then we need to pick its covariant components to satisfy

$$n_a \propto (1; 0, 0, 0)$$

If we want \mathbf{n} to be a *unit* vector that is “orthogonal” to space, then we need to pick its covariant components to satisfy

$$n_a = \pm (c; 0, 0, 0)$$

Its contravariant components are then

$$n^a = \mp \left(\frac{1}{c}; \frac{v^i}{c} \right) = \mp \frac{(1; v^i)}{c}$$

Choosing n^a to be a *future directed* unit vector orthogonal to the space slices then fixes

$$n^a = \left(\frac{1}{c}; \frac{v^i}{c} \right) = \frac{(1; v^i)}{c}$$

and

$$n_a = (-c; 0, 0, 0).$$

2.5.2 Reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) Decomposition

Definition 2. The “reverse-ADM decomposition” can be found in Landau-Lifshitz and consists of setting

$$g_{ab} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -c^2 & -v_j \\ \hline -v_i & h_{ij} - v_i v_j / c^2 \end{array} \right]$$

Notation: Again, Latin indices from the beginning of the alphabet (such as a, b, c, \dots) run from 0-3 and refer to space-time; Latin indices from the middle of the alphabet (i, j, k, \dots) run from 1-3 and refer to space. We use $X_{;a}$ to denote a space-time covariant derivative and $X_{;i}$ to denote a three-space covariant derivative.

Interpretation: The light cones, defined by $ds^2 = g_{ab} dx^a dx^b = 0$ now take the form

$$h_{ij} dx^i dx^j = c^2(dt + v_i dx^i)^2$$

We again say that h_{ij} is the 3-metric of space, though it’s a different 3-metric than in the ADM case. We take

$$h^{ij} = [h_{ij}]^{-1}$$

to be the inverse 3-metric, and

$$v^2 = h^{ij} v_i v_j = h_{ij} v^i v^j$$

Then c is the “two-way coordinate-averaged speed of light”, which is by construction isotropic. See §84 on pages 251-255 of [14] for details. The physical interpretation of the 3-velocity v^i is not particularly clear, and there seems to be no clean interpretation of the current formalism in terms of “analogue models” [23]. Nevertheless it is one of the standard metric decompositions, so let us adopt it and see what happens.

2.6 Static spacetimes: ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) Decomposition

Our strategy is straightforward:

- Take any static spacetime, and use the natural time coordinate to slice it into space plus time.
- Use the Gauss-Codazzi and Gauss-Weingarten equations to decompose the (3+1)-dimensional spacetime curvature tensor in terms of the 3-dimensional spatial curvature tensor, the extrinsic curvature of the time slice [zero], and the gravitational potential.

In any static spacetime one can decompose the spacetime metric into block diagonal form [1, 2, 3]:

$$\begin{aligned} ds^2 &= g_{\mu\nu} dx^\mu dx^\nu \\ &= -c^2 dt^2 + h_{ij} dx^i dx^j. \end{aligned} \tag{2.63}$$

Here c and h_{ij} are assumed to be time-independent, they depend only on position in space. This is equivalent to taking

$$g_{ab} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -c^2 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & h_{ij} \end{array} \right]$$

Theorem: In any static spacetime coordinates can be found in which the ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) decompositions are identical. The proof is by inspection. Simply set $\vec{v} = 0$ in the general formalism.

Being static tightly constrains the space-time geometry in terms of the three-geometry of space on a constant time slice, and the manner in which this three-geometry is embedded into the spacetime. For example, from [17], page 515, and applying page 518, we have the standard results (which we will re-derive in a slightly more general context below):

$$^{(3+1)}R_{ijkl} = ^{(3)}R_{ijkl}. \tag{2.64}$$

$$^{(3+1)}R_{tijk} = 0. \tag{2.65}$$

$$^{(3+1)}R_{titj} = c C_{;i;j}. \tag{2.66}$$

This will generalize when we allow time dependence for c and h_{ij} .

Now taking suitable contractions,

$${}^{(3+1)}R_{ij} = {}^{(3)}R_{ij} - \frac{c_{:i:j}}{c}. \quad (2.67)$$

$${}^{(3+1)}R_{ti} = 0. \quad (2.68)$$

$${}^{(3+1)}R_{tt} = c g^{ij} c_{:i:j} = c {}^{(3)}\Delta c. \quad (2.69)$$

So that

$${}^{(3+1)}R = {}^{(3)}R - 2 \frac{{}^{(3)}\Delta c}{c}. \quad (2.70)$$

Finally, for the spacetime Einstein tensor (for bits of this see [17], page 552, noting that in our present case $K_{ij} = 0$, while in the corresponding formulae of [17] they chose $c = 1$)

$${}^{(3+1)}G_{ij} = {}^{(3)}G_{ij} - \frac{c_{:i:j}}{c} + g_{ij} \left\{ \frac{{}^{(3)}\Delta c}{c} \right\}. \quad (2.71)$$

$${}^{(3+1)}G_{ti} = 0. \quad (2.72)$$

$${}^{(3+1)}G_{tt} = +\frac{c^2}{2} {}^{(3)}R. \quad (2.73)$$

This decomposition is generic to *any* static spacetime. (You can check this decomposition against various standard textbooks to make sure the coefficients are correct. For instance see [1, 12, 21]).

2.7 Zero-shift spacetimes: ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) Decomposition

If the spacetime is not static but the “shift vector” is zero we still have

$$g_{ab} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -c^2 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & h_{ij} \end{array} \right]. \quad (2.74)$$

(Such a decomposition is always possible in a globally hyperbolic spacetime.)

But now we will have to permit time dependence for both c and h_{ij} . Note that as

long as the shift vector is zero the ADM and reversed-ADM decompositions remain identical.

In this case it is useful to define a quantity called the extrinsic curvature [17], the equation (21.67)

$$K_{ij} = -\frac{1}{2c} \frac{\partial h_{ij}}{\partial t} \quad (2.75)$$

and then

$$^{(3+1)}R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} + K_{ik}K_{jl} - K_{il}K_{jk}. \quad (2.76)$$

$$^{(3+1)}R_{tijk} = c \{K_{ik;j} - K_{ij;k}\}. \quad (2.77)$$

$$^{(3+1)}R_{titj} = c c_{;ij} + \text{“mess”}. \quad (2.78)$$

See [17], equations (21.75) and (21.76). Note $(n \cdot n) = -1$, and the “ n -coordinate” of equation (21.76) is really “ Nt ” [that is, “ ct ”]. The last equation for $^{(3+1)}R_{titj}$ is not given by [17], except implicitly on page 518, and this really is a bit of a mess which we shall explicitly calculate below.

But some pieces of the Riemann, Ricci, and Einstein *can* be immediately read off from [17]. For instance from [17], equation (21.8)

$$R_{ti} = G_{ti} = N \{K_{ij}{}^{;j} - tr(K)_{;i}\}$$

while from [17], equation (21.77)

$$G_{tt} = \frac{1}{2}N^2 \{ {}^{(3)}R + (tr K)^2 - tr(K^2) \}$$

2.7.1 Systematic derivation

Christoffel symbols of the first kind:

$$\Gamma_{ttt} = g_{t(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,t} = \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,t} = -\frac{1}{2} (c^2)_{,t} = -c c_{,t} \quad (2.79)$$

$$\Gamma_{itt} = g_{i(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,i} = -\frac{1}{2} g_{tt,t} = +\frac{1}{2} (c^2)_{,t} = +c c_{,t} \quad (2.80)$$

$$\Gamma_{tti} = \Gamma_{tit} = g_{t(t,i)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{ti,t} = \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,i} = -\frac{1}{2} (c^2)_{,i} = -c c_{,i} \quad (2.81)$$

$$\Gamma_{tij} = g_{t(i,j)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{ij,t} = -\frac{1}{2} g_{ij,t} = -\frac{1}{2} h_{ij,t} = c K_{ij} \quad (2.82)$$

$$\Gamma_{itj} = \Gamma_{ijt} = g_{i(t,j)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{tj,i} = \frac{1}{2} g_{ij,t} = \frac{1}{2} h_{ij,t} = -c K_{ij} \quad (2.83)$$

$$\Gamma_{ijk} = g_{i(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jk,i} = h_{i(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} h_{jk,i} = {}^{(3)}\Gamma_{ijk} \quad (2.84)$$

Raising the first index:

Christoffel symbols of the second kind:

$$\Gamma^t_{tt} = \frac{c_{,t}}{c} \quad (2.85)$$

$$\Gamma^i_{tt} = +c h^{ij} c_{,j} = +c c^{,j} \quad (2.86)$$

$$\Gamma^t_{ti} = \Gamma^t_{it} = \frac{c_{,i}}{c} \quad (2.87)$$

$$\Gamma^t_{ij} = -\frac{K_{ij}}{c} \quad (2.88)$$

$$\Gamma^i_{tj} = \Gamma^i_{jr} = -c K^i_j \quad (2.89)$$

$$\Gamma^i_{jk} = {}^{(3)}\Gamma^i_{jk} \quad (2.90)$$

2.7.2 Riemann tensor

Now insert this into the formula for the Riemann tensor.

$$R^a_{bcd} = -2 \{ \Gamma^a_{b[c,d]} - \Gamma^a_{e[c} \Gamma^e_{|b|d]} \} \quad (2.91)$$

where the $|b|$ indicates we do not anti-symmetrize over the b . Lowering the a index

$$R_{abcd} = -2 \{ \Gamma_{ab[c,d]} + g_{ae,[d} \Gamma^e_{|b|c]} - \Gamma^a_{e[c} \Gamma^e_{|b|d]} \} \quad (2.92)$$

and rearranging

$$R_{abcd} = -2 \{ \Gamma_{ab[c,d]} + \Gamma_{ea[c} g^{ef} \Gamma_{|fb|d]} \} \quad (2.93)$$

This is equivalent, for instance, to the unnumbered equation on page 21 of [10], which can further be simplified to

$$R_{abcd} = \frac{1}{2} \{ g_{ad,bc} - g_{bd,ac} - g_{ac,bd} + g_{bc,ad} \} + \Gamma_{ead} g^{ef} \Gamma_{fbc} - \Gamma_{eac} g^{ef} \Gamma_{fbd} \quad (2.94)$$

This is equation (11.6) of [10]. So far this is completely general. If g_{ab} block diagonalizes in the manner $g_{ab} = -c^2 \bigoplus h_{ij}$ then we have

$$\begin{aligned} R_{abcd} &= \frac{1}{2} \{ g_{ad,bc} - g_{bd,ac} - g_{ac,bd} + g_{bc,ad} \} - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{tad} \Gamma_{tbc} \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{tac} \Gamma_{tbd} + h^{mn} \Gamma_{mad} \Gamma_{nbc} - h^{mn} \Gamma_{mac} \Gamma_{nbd} \end{aligned} \quad (2.95)$$

R_{ijkl} : If we now look at the space components of the 4-dimensional Riemann tensor we have

$$\begin{aligned} R_{ijkl} &= \frac{1}{2} \{ g_{il,jk} - g_{jl,ik} - g_{ik,jl} + g_{jk,il} \} - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{til} \Gamma_{tjk} \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{tik} \Gamma_{tjl} + h^{mn} \Gamma_{mil} \Gamma_{njk} - h^{mn} \Gamma_{mik} \Gamma_{njl} \end{aligned} \quad (2.96)$$

But most of this is simply the 3-dimensional Riemann tensor

$$R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{til} \Gamma_{tjk} + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{tik} \Gamma_{tjl} \quad (2.97)$$

and the rest we recognize in terms of the K_{ij} we defined earlier, so that

$$R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} - K_{il} K_{jk} + K_{ik} K_{jl} \quad (2.98)$$

which is the explicit way of doing things.

R_{tijk} : In a similar manner we can evaluate R_{tijk} as

$$\begin{aligned} R_{tijk} &= \frac{1}{2} \{ g_{tk,ij} - g_{ik,tj} - g_{tj,ik} + g_{ij,tk} \} - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttk} \Gamma_{tij} \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{tik} + h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtk} \Gamma_{nij} - h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{nik} \end{aligned} \quad (2.99)$$

which we can re-write as

$$R_{tijk} = (cK_{ik})_{,j} - (cK_{ij})_{,k} - c_{,j}K_{ik} + C_{,k}K_{ij} - cK^n{}_k \Gamma_{nij} + cK^n{}_j \Gamma_{nik}$$

so that

$$R_{tijk} = cK_{ik,j} - cK_{ij,k} - cK^n{}_k \Gamma_{nij} + cK^n{}_j \Gamma_{nik}$$

that is, in terms of 3-space covariant derivatives

$$R_{tijk} = c \{K_{ik;j} - K_{ij;k}\} \quad (2.100)$$

This is the second part of what we were trying to prove.

R_{titj} : It only remains to calculate R_{titj} . (After all R_{ttij} , R_{ttti} , R_{tttt} and so on are all zero by symmetries of the Riemann tensor.)

So let us calculate

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} &= \frac{1}{2} \{g_{tj,it} - g_{ij,tt} - g_{tt,ij} + g_{it,tj}\} - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{tit} \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttt} \Gamma_{tij} + h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{nit} - h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtt} \Gamma_{nij} \end{aligned}$$

So that

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} &= \frac{1}{2} \{-h_{ij,tt} + (c^2)_{,ij}\} \\ &\quad - \frac{1}{c^2} (-c c_{,j}) (-c c_{,i}) + \frac{1}{c^2} (-c c_{,t}) (c K_{ij}) \\ &\quad + h^{mn} (-c K_{mj}) (-c K_{ni}) - h^{mn} (c c_{,m}) \Gamma_{nij} \end{aligned}$$

That is:

$$R_{titj} = (cK_{ij})_{,t} + c c_{,ij} + c_{,i} c_{,j} - c_{,j} c_{,i} - c_{,t} K_{ij} + c^2 (K_{im} h^{mn} K_{nj}) - (c c_{,m}) \Gamma^m{}_{ij}$$

So finally

$$R_{titj} = cK_{ij,t} + c c_{,ij} + (K^2)_{ij} \quad (2.101)$$

Summary: Whenever the metric g_{ab} block diagonalizes in the manner $g_{ab} = -c^2 \oplus h_{ij}$, then even if we allow arbitrary time dependence we have the relativity simple results

$$R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} - K_{il} K_{jk} + K_{ik} K_{jl} \quad (2.102)$$

$$R_{tijk} = c \{K_{ik;j} - K_{ij;k}\} \quad (2.103)$$

$$R_{titj} = cK_{ij,t} + c c_{;i;j} + (K^2)_{ij} \quad (2.104)$$

where

$$K_{ij} = -\frac{1}{2c} \frac{\partial h_{ij}}{\partial t}$$

Of course once we have deduced these results for the Riemann tensor, results for the Ricci tensor and Einstein tensor can be obtained by simple contraction.

2.8 General stationary spacetime: ADM Decomposition

For a general stationary spacetime we need to use the full ADM decomposition

$$g_{ab} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -[c^2 - v^2] & -v_j \\ \hline -v_i & h_{ij} \end{array} \right]$$

$$g^{ab} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -1/c^2 & -v^j/c^2 \\ \hline -v^i/c^2 & h^{ij} - v^i v^j / c^2 \end{array} \right]$$

We do however have the simplification that all quantities are time-independent. (All time derivatives vanish). Note that the ADM decomposition is in this case quite distinct from the reverse-ADM decomposition.

We still have, thanks to Dirac

$$R_{abcd} = \frac{1}{2} \{g_{ad,bc} - g_{bd,ac} - g_{ac,bd} + g_{bc,ad}\} + \Gamma_{ead} g^{ef} \Gamma_{fbc} - \Gamma_{eac} g^{ef} \Gamma_{fbd} \quad (2.105)$$

But now when we insert the inverse metric

$$\begin{aligned}
R_{abcd} = & \frac{1}{2} \{ g_{ad,bc} - g_{bd,ac} - g_{ac,bd} + g_{bc,ad} \} \\
& - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{tad} \Gamma_{tbc} + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{tac} \Gamma_{tbd} \\
& - (v^m/c^2) \{ \Gamma_{tad} \Gamma_{mbc} + \Gamma_{mad} \Gamma_{tbc} \} + (v^m/c^2) \{ \Gamma_{mac} \Gamma_{tbd} + \Gamma_{tac} \Gamma_{mbd} \} \\
& + (h^{mn} - v^m v^n / c^2) \Gamma_{mad} \Gamma_{nbc} - (h^{mn} - v^m v^n / c^2) \Gamma_{mac} \Gamma_{nbd} \quad (2.106)
\end{aligned}$$

\mathbf{R}_{ijkl} : Start by looking at the space components R_{ijkl} . We have

$$\begin{aligned}
R_{ijkl} = & \frac{1}{2} \{ g_{il,jk} - g_{jl,ik} - g_{ik,lj} + g_{jk,il} \} \\
& - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{til} \Gamma_{tjk} + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{tik} \Gamma_{tjl} \\
& - (v^m/c^2) \{ \Gamma_{til} \Gamma_{mjk} + \Gamma_{mil} \Gamma_{tjk} \} + (v^m/c^2) \{ \Gamma_{mik} \Gamma_{tjl} + \Gamma_{tik} \Gamma_{mjl} \} \\
& - (v^m v^n / c^2) \Gamma_{mil} \Gamma_{njc} - (v^m v^n / c^2) \Gamma_{mik} \Gamma_{njl} \\
& + h^{mn} \Gamma_{mil} \Gamma_{njc} - h^{mn} \Gamma_{mik} \Gamma_{njl} \quad (2.107)
\end{aligned}$$

But most of this is simply the 3-dimensional Riemann tensor, and the rest can easily be regrouped as

$$R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} - \frac{1}{c^2} (\Gamma_{til} + v^m \Gamma_{mil}) (\Gamma_{tjk} + v^n \Gamma_{njc}) + \frac{1}{c^2} (\Gamma_{tik} + v^m \Gamma_{mik}) (\Gamma_{tjl} + v^n \Gamma_{njl}) \quad (2.108)$$

Now suppose we define

$$K_{ij} = \frac{1}{c} \{ \Gamma_{tij} + v^m \Gamma_{mij} \} \quad (2.109)$$

This is a natural generalization of our previous definition, and would allow us to again write

$$R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} - K_{il} K_{jk} + K_{ik} K_{jl} \quad (2.110)$$

but now for this “improved” definition of K_{ij} . Let’s check what happens. Having delayed things as long as possible, we’ll have to start by calculating Christoffel symbols.

2.8.1 Christoffel symbols of first kind

(Remember, stationary, no t dependence):

$$\Gamma_{ttt} = g_{t(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,t} = \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,t} = 0 \quad (2.111)$$

$$\Gamma_{itt} = g_{i(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,t} = -\frac{1}{2} g_{tt,i} = +\frac{1}{2} (c^2 - v^2)_{,i} \quad (2.112)$$

$$\Gamma_{tti} = \Gamma_{tit} = g_{t(t,i)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{ti,t} = \frac{1}{2} g_{tt,i} = -\frac{1}{2} (c^2 - v^2)_{,i} \quad (2.113)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma_{tij} &= g_{t(i,j)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{ij,t} = +\frac{1}{2} (g_{ti,j} + g_{tj,i}) \\ &= -\frac{1}{2} (v_{i,j} + v_{j,i}) = -v_{(i,j)} \end{aligned} \quad (2.114)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma_{itj} &= \Gamma_{ijt} = g_{i(t,j)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{tj,i} = \frac{1}{2} (g_{it,j} - g_{tj,i}) \\ &= -\frac{1}{2} (v_{i,j} - v_{j,i}) = -v_{[i,j]} \end{aligned} \quad (2.115)$$

$$\Gamma_{ijk} = g_{i(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{jk,i} = h_{i(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2} h_{jk,i} = {}^{(3)}\Gamma_{ijk} \quad (2.116)$$

Then we have

$$\frac{1}{c} \{ \Gamma_{tij} + v^m \Gamma_{mij} \} = \frac{1}{c} \{ -v_{(i,j)} + v_m \Gamma^m_{ij} \} = -\frac{1}{c} v_{(i;j)} \quad (2.117)$$

so that in this situation

$$K_{ij} = -\frac{1}{c} v_{(i;j)} \quad (2.118)$$

This is compatible with the general definition of extrinsic curvature, see [17] equation (21.67), note that our v^i is *minus* the shift vector.

R_{tijk}: In a similar manner we can evaluate R_{tijk} as

$$\begin{aligned} R_{tijk} &= \frac{1}{2} \{ g_{tk,ij} - g_{ik,tj} - g_{tj,ik} + g_{ij,tk} \} \\ &\quad - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttk} \Gamma_{tij} + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{tik} \\ &\quad - (v^m/c^2) \{ \Gamma_{ttk} \Gamma_{mij} + \Gamma_{mtk} \Gamma_{tij} \} + (v^m/c^2) \{ \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{tik} + \Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{mik} \} \\ &\quad + (h^{mn} - v^m v^n/c^2) \Gamma_{mtk} \Gamma_{nij} - (h^{mn} - v^m v^n/c^2) \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{nik} \end{aligned} \quad (2.119)$$

which we can re-write as

$$\begin{aligned}
R_{tijk} &= \frac{1}{2} \{-v_{k,ij} + v_{j,ik}\} \\
&\quad - \frac{1}{c^2} (\Gamma_{ttk} + v^m \Gamma_{mtk}) (\Gamma_{tij} + v^m \Gamma_{mij}) + \frac{1}{c^2} (\Gamma_{ttj} + v^m \Gamma_{mtj}) (\Gamma_{tik} + v^m \Gamma_{mik}) \\
&\quad + h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtk} \Gamma_{nij} - h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{nik}
\end{aligned} \tag{2.120}$$

Now

$$\Gamma_{ttk} + v^m \Gamma_{mtk} = -\frac{1}{2}(c^2 - v^2)_{,k} - \frac{1}{2}v^m(v_{m,k} - v_{k,m}) = -\frac{1}{2}(c^2 - v^2)_{:k} - \frac{1}{2}v^m(v_{m:k} - v_{k:m}) \tag{2.121}$$

so that

$$\Gamma_{ttk} + v^m \Gamma_{mtk} = -\frac{1}{2}(c^2)_{,k} + \frac{1}{2}v^m(v_{m:k} + v_{k:m}) = -c \{c_{,k} + v^m K_{mk}\} \tag{2.122}$$

So now

$$R_{tijk} = \frac{1}{2} \{-v_{k,ij} + v_{j,ik}\} - (c_{,k} + v^m K_{mk}) K_{ij} + (c_{,j} + v^m K_{mj}) K_{ik} - v_{[m,k]} \Gamma^m_{ij} + v_{[m,j]} \Gamma^m_{ik} \tag{2.123}$$

This can be rewritten in several ways: If we remain in a coordinate basis

$$R_{tijk} = v_{[j,k],i} - v_{[m,k]} \Gamma^m_{ji} - v_{[j,m]} \Gamma^m_{ki} - (c_{,k} + v^m K_{mk}) K_{ij} + (c_{,j} + v^m K_{mj}) K_{ik} \tag{2.124}$$

whence

$$R_{tijk} = v_{[j:k]:i} - (c_{,k} + v^m K_{mk}) K_{ij} + (c_{,j} + v^m K_{mj}) K_{ik} \tag{2.125}$$

This is relatively compact, but not so easy to compare to our previous result.

But we can also write

$$\begin{aligned}
2v_{[j:k]:i} &= v_{j:k,i} - v_{k:j,i} = v_{j:i,k} + v_m {}^{(3)}R^m_{jki} - v_{k:i,j} - v_m {}^{(3)}R^m_{kji} \\
&= v_{j:i,k} + v_{i:j,k} - v_{k:i,j} - v_{i:k,j} + v_m ({}^{(3)}R^m_{jki} - {}^{(3)}R^m_{kji} - {}^{(3)}R^m_{ijk}) \\
&= 2(v_{(i:j):k} - v_{(i:k):j} - v_m {}^{(3)}R^m_{ijk}) \\
&= 2([-cK_{ij}]_{:k} - [-cK_{ik}]_{:j} - v_m {}^{(3)}R^m_{ijk})
\end{aligned} \tag{2.126}$$

which lets us write

$$R_{tijk} = c \{[K_{ik}]_{:k} - [K_{ij}]_{:k}\} - v^m [{}^{(3)}R_{mijk} - K_{mk} K_{ij} + K_{mj} K_{ik}] \tag{2.127}$$

that is, in view of our previous result,

$$R_{tijk} = c[K_{ik:j} - K_{ij:k}] - v^m R_{mijk} \quad (2.128)$$

This is the tidiest we can make things in a coordinate basis. This is the analogue of [17], equation (21.76).

For future reference define

$$\Omega_{ij} = v_{[i,j]} = v_{[i:j]} \quad (2.129)$$

and note the identity

$$\Omega_{jk:i} = [cK_{ik}]_{:j} - [cK_{ij}]_{:k} - v_m {}^{(3)}R^m{}_{ijk} \quad (2.130)$$

Note that it is sometimes easier to work in what is referred to as a “non-coordinate basis” by defining:

$$R_{nijk} \equiv n^a R_{aijk} \quad (2.131)$$

in which case

$$R_{nijk} = \frac{1}{c}(1; v^m) (R_{tijk}; R_{mijk}) = \frac{1}{c} [R_{tijk} + v^m R_{mijk}] = K_{ik:j} - K_{ij:k}. \quad (2.132)$$

This means you are not really looking in the “ t ” direction, but are instead looking in the “ n ” direction normal to “space”.

R_{titj}: Now for the R_{titj} pieces. This is where things might get a little messy. From Dirac’s general formula, applied to the present situation

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} = & \frac{1}{2} \{g_{tj,it} - g_{ij,tt} - g_{tt,ij} + g_{it,tj}\} \\ & - \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{tit} + \frac{1}{c^2} \Gamma_{ttt} \Gamma_{tij} \\ & - (v^m/c^2) \{\Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{mit} + \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{tit}\} + (v^m/c^2) \{\Gamma_{mtt} \Gamma_{tij} + \Gamma_{ttt} \Gamma_{mij}\} \\ & + (h^{mn} - v^m v^n/c^2) \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{nit} - (h^{mn} - v^m v^n/c^2) \Gamma_{mtt} \Gamma_{nij} \end{aligned} \quad (2.133)$$

Because of time independence this greatly simplifies

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} = & \frac{1}{2} \{-g_{tt,ij}\} - \frac{1}{c^2} \{\Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{tit}\} \\ & - (v^m/c^2) \{\Gamma_{ttj} \Gamma_{mit} + \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{tit} - \Gamma_{mtt} \Gamma_{tij}\} \\ & + (h^{mn} - v^m v^n/c^2) \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{nit} - (h^{mn} - v^m v^n/c^2) \Gamma_{mtt} \Gamma_{nij} \end{aligned} \quad (2.134)$$

so that

$$R_{titj} = \frac{1}{2} \{-g_{tt,ij}\} - \frac{1}{c^2} (\Gamma_{ttj} + v^m \Gamma_{mtj}) (\Gamma_{tit} + v^m \Gamma_{mit}) \\ + (v^m/c^2) \Gamma_{mtt} \Gamma_{tij} + h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtj} \Gamma_{nit} - h^{mn} \Gamma_{mtt} \Gamma_{nij} \quad (2.135)$$

Inserting the known values of the Christoffel symbols (calculated above)

$$R_{titj} = \frac{1}{2} (c^2 - v^2)_{,ij} - (c_{,j} + v^m K_{mj})(c_{,i} + v^m K_{mi}) - \frac{1}{2} (v^m/c^2) (c^2 - v^2)_{,m} v_{(i,j)} \\ + h^{mn} v_{[m,j]} v_{[n,i]} - \frac{1}{2} h^{mn} (c^2 - v^2)_{,m} \Gamma_{nij} \quad (2.136)$$

That is

$$R_{titj} = \frac{1}{2} (c^2 - v^2)_{:ij} - (c_{,j} + v^m K_{mj})(c_{,i} + v^m K_{mi}) + \frac{1}{2} (v^m/c) (c^2 - v^2)_{,m} K_{ij} \\ + h^{mn} v_{[m,j]} v_{[n,i]} \quad (2.137)$$

But then

$$R_{titj} = c c_{:ij} - \frac{1}{2} (v^2)_{:ij} - v^m [c_{,j} K_{mi} + c_{,i} K_{mj}] - v^m K_{mj} v^n K_{ni} \\ + v^m c_{,m} K_{ij} - \frac{1}{2} (v^m/c) (v^2)_{,m} K_{ij} + h^{mn} v_{[m,j]} v_{[n,i]} \quad (2.138)$$

Which still needs to be simplified further.

For instance

$$\frac{1}{2} (v^2)_{:ij} = \frac{1}{2} (v^k v_k)_{:ij} = (v^k v_{k:i})_{:j} = (v^k_{:j} v_{k:i}) + (v^k v_{k:i:j}) \quad (2.139)$$

But

$$v^k_{:j} v_{k:i} = h^{kl} v_{k:j} v_{k:i} = h^{kl} (-c K_{kj} + v_{[k:j]}) (-c K_{li} + v_{[l:i]}) \\ = c^2 (K^2)_{ij} - c (K \Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} + h^{mn} v_{[m,j]} v_{[n,i]} \quad (2.140)$$

where with obvious notation $\Omega_{ij} = v_{[i,j]}$ and

$$(K \Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} = K_{ik} g^{kl} \Omega_{lj} - \Omega_{ik} g^{kl} K_{lj} \quad (2.141)$$

Aside: Write $(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij}$ as

$$Kg^{-1}\Omega - \Omega g^{-1}K$$

then

$$\begin{aligned} (Kg^{-1}\Omega - \Omega g^{-1}K)^T &= \Omega^T [g^{-1}]^T K^T - K^T [g^{-1}]^T \Omega^T \\ &= -\Omega g^{-1}K + Kg^{-1}\Omega \end{aligned} \quad (2.142)$$

so this object is *symmetric*, as long as the minus sign is included.

Then

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} &= c c_{:ij} - (v^k v_{k:i:j}) - c^2 (K^2)_{ij} + c(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \\ &\quad - v^m [c_{,j} K_{mi} + c_{,i} K_{mj}] - v^m K_{mj} v^n K_{ni} \\ &\quad + v^m c_{,m} K_{ij} - (v^m/c) (v^k v_{k:m}) K_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (2.143)$$

so that

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} &= c c_{:ij} - (v^k v_{k:i:j}) - c^2 (K^2)_{ij} + c(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \\ &\quad - v^m [c_{,j} K_{mi} + c_{,i} K_{mj}] - v^m K_{mj} v^n K_{ni} \\ &\quad + v^m c_{,m} K_{ij} + (v^k v^l K_{kl}) K_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (2.144)$$

Now by the Ricci identities the combination $v^k v_{k:i:j}$ is symmetric in ij , so that we can write:

$$v^k v_{k:i:j} = v^k v_{k:(i:j)} \quad (2.145)$$

But now consider

$$\begin{aligned} v_{k:(i:j)} &= \frac{1}{2} \{v_{k:i:j} + v_{k:j:i}\} = \frac{1}{2} \{(-cK_{ki} + \Omega_{ki})_{:j} + (-cK_{kj} + \Omega_{kj})_{:i}\} \\ &= -\frac{1}{2} \{(cK_{ki})_{:j} + (cK_{kj})_{:i}\} + \frac{1}{2} \{\Omega_{ki:j} + \Omega_{kj:i}\} \end{aligned} \quad (2.146)$$

Then recall the identity

$$\Omega_{jk:i} = [cK_{ik}]_{:j} - [cK_{ij}]_{:k} - v_m {}^{(3)}R^m_{ijk} \quad (2.147)$$

to deduce

$$v_{k:(i:j)} = [cK_{ij}]_{:k} + \frac{1}{2}v_m \left({}^{(3)}R^m_{ijk} + {}^{(3)}R^m_{jik} \right) \quad (2.148)$$

whence

$$v^k v_{k:(i:j)} = v^k [cK_{ij}]_{:k} - v^k v^l {}^{(3)}R_{kilj} \quad (2.149)$$

Putting this back into R_{titj} we have

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} &= c c_{:ij} - v^k [cK_{ij}]_{:k} + v^k v^l {}^{(3)}R_{kilj} - c^2(K^2)_{ij} + c(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \\ &\quad - v^m K_{mj} v^n K_{ni} + v^m c_{,m} K_{ij} + (v^k v^l K_{kl}) K_{ij} \end{aligned} \quad (2.150)$$

which simplifies to

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} &= c c_{:ij} - v^k c K_{ij:k} - c^2(K^2)_{ij} + c(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \\ &\quad - v^m K_{mj} v^n K_{ni} + (v^k v^l K_{kl}) K_{ij} + v^k v^l {}^{(3)}R_{kilj} \end{aligned} \quad (2.151)$$

We can rewrite the last line in terms of the 4-curvature as

$$\begin{aligned} R_{titj} &= c c_{:ij} - v^k c K_{ij:k} - c^2(K^2)_{ij} + c(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \\ &\quad + v^k v^l R_{kilj} \end{aligned} \quad (2.152)$$

This is the simplest expression we can get in a coordinate basis.

R_{ninj} : Now define in a “non-coordinate basis”.

$$\begin{aligned} R_{ninj} &\equiv n^a n^b R_{aibj} = \frac{1}{c^2} (1; v^i)^a (1; v^l)^b R_{aibj} \\ &= \frac{1}{c^2} [R_{titj} + v^k R_{tikj} + v^k R_{kitj} + v^k v^l R_{kilj}] \\ &= \frac{1}{c^2} [R_{titj} - cv^k [K_{ik:j} - K_{ij:k}] - cv^k [K_{jk:i} - K_{ij:k}] - v^k v^l R_{kilj}] \\ &= \frac{1}{c^2} [R_{titj} - cv^k [K_{ik:j} + K_{jk:i} - 2K_{ij:k}] - v^k v^l R_{kilj}] \end{aligned} \quad (2.153)$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} c^2 R_{ninj} &= c c_{:ij} - v^k c K_{ij:k} - c^2(K^2)_{ij} + c(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \\ &\quad - c v^k [K_{ik:j} + K_{jk:i} - 2K_{ij:k}] \end{aligned} \quad (2.154)$$

There are now some simplifications

$$\begin{aligned} c^2 R_{ninj} &= c c_{:ij} + c v^k K_{ij:k} - c^2 (K^2)_{ij} + c(K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \\ &\quad - c v^k [K_{ik:j} + K_{jk:i}] \end{aligned} \quad (2.155)$$

To simplify this we consider the Lie derivative

$$\mathcal{L}_v K_{ij} = v^k \partial_k K_{ij} + v^k_{;i} K_{kj} + v^k_{;j} K_{ik} \quad (2.156)$$

which can also be written in terms of 3-covariant derivatives as

$$\mathcal{L}_v K_{ij} = v^k K_{ij:k} + v^k_{;i} K_{kj} + v^k_{;j} K_{ik} \quad (2.157)$$

so that

$$\mathcal{L}_v K_{ij} = v^k K_{ij:k} + h^{kl} [(-cK_{ki} + \Omega_{ki})K_{lj} + (-cK_{kj} + \Omega_{kj})K_{il}] \quad (2.158)$$

and

$$\mathcal{L}_v K_{ij} = v^k K_{ij:k} - 2c (K^2)_{ij} + (K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} \quad (2.159)$$

Therefore

$$c^2 R_{ninj} = c c_{:ij} + c \mathcal{L}_v K_{ij} + c^2 (K^2)_{ij} - c v^k [K_{ik:j} + K_{jk:i}] \quad (2.160)$$

Summary :

For an arbitrary stationary spacetime. taking

$$K_{ij} = -\frac{1}{c} v_{(i;j)}$$

we have

$$R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} - K_{il} K_{jk} + K_{ik} K_{jl} \quad (2.161)$$

$$R_{tijk} = c [K_{ik:j} - K_{ij:k}] - v^m R_{mijk} \quad (2.162)$$

$$R_{titj} = c c_{:ij} - v^k c K_{ij:k} - c^2 (K^2)_{ij} + c (K\Omega - \Omega K)_{ij} + v^k v^l R_{kilj} \quad (2.163)$$

We can also write this as

$$R_{nijk} \equiv n^a R_{aijk} = K_{ij:k} - K_{ik:j}. \quad (2.164)$$

and

$$R_{ninj} \equiv n^a n^b R_{aibj} = c c_{:ij} + c \mathcal{L}_v K_{ij} + c^2 (K^2)_{ij} - c v^k [K_{ik:j} + K_{jk:i}]. \quad (2.165)$$

2.8.2 Completely general ADM decomposition

For the general ADM case coordinate techniques are too messy to contemplate. The easy results are on page 514 of [17] and boil down to

$$K_{ij} = -\frac{1}{c} \left[\frac{1}{2} \partial_t g_{ij} + v_{(i;j)} \right] \quad (2.166)$$

note that K_{ij} is now a combination of the zero-shift and stationary case.

Then

$$R_{ijkl} = {}^{(3)}R_{ijkl} - K_{il} K_{jk} + K_{ik} K_{jl} \quad (2.167)$$

and

$$R_{nijk} \equiv n^a R_{aijk} = K_{ij;k} - K_{ik;j} \quad (2.168)$$

The difficult one is then encoded in page 518, [17] which seems to assert that

$$R_{nink} \equiv n^a n^b R_{aibj} = [\mathcal{L}_n K]_{ij} + [K^2]_{ij} + a_{(i;j)} + a_i a_j \quad (2.169)$$

where a_i is the space projection of the 4-acceleration $\mathbf{a} = (\mathbf{n} \cdot \nabla) \mathbf{n}$.

2.8.3 The inverse-ADM decomposition

We can decompose the metric as follows

$$g_{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -1/N^2 & v_i/N^2 \\ \hline v_i/N^2 & h_{ij} - v_i v_j / N^2 \end{array} \right] \quad (2.170)$$

with

$$N = N(t, x, y, z), \quad v_i = v_i(t, x, y, z), \text{ and } h_{ij} = h_{ij}(t, x, y, z).$$

The inverse metric is now

$$g^{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -[N^2 - h^{ij} v_i v_j] & v^i \\ \hline v^i & h^{ij} \end{array} \right] \quad (2.171)$$

where $v^i = h^{ij} v_j$ and $h^{ij} = [h_{ij}]^{-1}$

This is the reverse of ADM formulation

$$g_{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|cccc} g_{11} & g_{12} & g_{13} & g_{14} \\ \hline g_{21} & g_{22} & g_{23} & g_{24} \\ g_{31} & g_{32} & g_{33} & g_{34} \\ g_{41} & g_{42} & g_{43} & g_{44} \end{array} \right] = \left[\begin{array}{c|cccc} -1/N^2 & v_2/N^2 & v_3/N^2 & v_4/N^2 \\ \hline v_2/N^2 & h_{22} - v_2 v_2/N^2 & h_{23} - v_2 v_3/N^2 & h_{24} - v_2 v_4/N^2 \\ v_3/N^2 & h_{32} - v_3 v_2/N^2 & h_{33} - v_3 v_3/N^2 & h_{34} - v_3 v_4/N^2 \\ v_4/N^2 & h_{42} - v_4 v_2/N^2 & h_{43} - v_4 v_3/N^2 & h_{44} - v_4 v_4/N^2 \end{array} \right] \quad (2.172)$$

and

$$g^{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|ccc} -[N^2 - \sum_{i,j=1}^4 h^{ij} v_i v_j] & v^2 & v^3 & v^4 \\ \hline v^2 & h^{22} & h^{23} & h^{24} \\ v^3 & h^{32} & h^{33} & h^{34} \\ v^4 & h^{42} & h^{43} & h^{44} \end{array} \right] \quad (2.173)$$

For the time being, let $v_i = 0$ then

$$g_{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|cccc} g_{11} & g_{12} & g_{13} & g_{14} \\ \hline g_{21} & g_{22} & g_{23} & g_{24} \\ g_{31} & g_{32} & g_{33} & g_{34} \\ g_{41} & g_{42} & g_{43} & g_{44} \end{array} \right] = \left[\begin{array}{c|ccc} -1/N^2 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & h_{22} & h_{23} & h_{24} \\ 0 & h_{32} & h_{33} & h_{34} \\ 0 & h_{42} & h_{43} & h_{44} \end{array} \right] \quad (2.174)$$

and

$$g^{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|cccc} g^{11} & g^{12} & g^{13} & g^{14} \\ \hline g^{21} & g^{22} & g^{23} & g^{24} \\ g^{31} & g^{32} & g^{33} & g^{34} \\ g^{41} & g^{42} & g^{43} & g^{44} \end{array} \right] = \left[\begin{array}{c|ccc} -N^2 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & h^{22} & h^{23} & h^{24} \\ 0 & h^{32} & h^{33} & h^{34} \\ 0 & h^{42} & h^{43} & h^{44} \end{array} \right] \quad (2.175)$$

The 4 dimensional metric can be spilt up into one 3×3 block, and two 1×3 blocks with two of them trivial (zero). That is

$$g_{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -1/N^2 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & h_{ij} \end{array} \right] \quad (2.176)$$

The inverse tensor is very simple

$$g^{\mu\nu} = \left[\begin{array}{c|c} -N^2 & 0 \\ \hline 0 & h^{ij} \end{array} \right] \quad (2.177)$$

where $-N^2$ and h^{ij} are two dimensional inverses of the 1×1 matrix and 3×3 matrices $-1/N^2$ and h_{ij} , respectively.

The Christoffel symbols can be computed from

$$\Gamma^\mu_{\sigma\rho} = g^{\mu\nu} \left\{ g_{\nu(\sigma, \rho)} - \frac{1}{2} g_{\sigma\rho, \nu} \right\} \quad (2.178)$$

and you can spilt them up into little sub-blocks

$$\Gamma^\mu_{\sigma\rho} = \left[\begin{array}{c|cccc} \Gamma^\mu_{11} & \Gamma^\mu_{12} & \Gamma^\mu_{13} & \Gamma^\mu_{14} \\ \hline \Gamma^\mu_{12} & \Gamma^\mu_{22} & \Gamma^\mu_{23} & \Gamma^\mu_{24} \\ \Gamma^\mu_{13} & \Gamma^\mu_{23} & \Gamma^\mu_{33} & \Gamma^\mu_{34} \\ \Gamma^\mu_{14} & \Gamma^\mu_{24} & \Gamma^\mu_{34} & \Gamma^\mu_{44} \end{array} \right] \quad (2.179)$$

2.8.4 Christoffel symbols of the 2 metrics $-1/N^2$ and h_{ij}

Some of these blocks should have a simple interpretation in terms of Christoffel symbols of the lower dimensional metrics $-1/N^2$ and h_{ij} .

When t = time and i, j = space, for example

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma_{tt}^t &= g^{t\nu}\{g_{\nu(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{tt,\nu}\} = g^{tt}\{g_{t(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{tt,t}\} \\ &= g^{tt}\{\frac{1}{2}g_{tt,t} + \frac{1}{2}g_{tt,t} - \frac{1}{2}g_{tt,t}\} \\ &= g^{tt}\{\frac{1}{2}g_{tt,t}\} = -\frac{1}{2}N^2\{(-\frac{1}{N^2})_{,t}\} = -\frac{\dot{N}}{N}\end{aligned}\tag{2.180}$$

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma_{ij}^t &= g^{t\nu}\{g_{\nu(i,j)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{ij,\nu}\} = g^{tt}\{g_{t(i,j)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{ij,t}\} \\ &= g^{tt}\{0 - \frac{1}{2}h_{ij,t}\} = N^2\{\frac{1}{2}h_{ij,t}\} = \frac{1}{2}N^2\{h_{ij,t}\}\end{aligned}\tag{2.181}$$

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma_{ti}^t &= g^{t\nu}\{g_{\nu(t,i)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{ti,\nu}\} = g^{tt}\{g_{t(t,i)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{ti,t}\} \\ &= g^{tt}\{\frac{1}{2}g_{tt,i} + \frac{1}{2}g_{ti,t} - \frac{1}{2}g_{ti,t}\} \\ &= g^{tt}\{\frac{1}{2}g_{tt,i}\} = \frac{1}{2}N^2\{(-\frac{1}{N^2})_{,i}\} = \frac{\partial_i N}{N}\end{aligned}\tag{2.182}$$

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma_{tt}^i &= g^{i\nu}\{g_{\nu(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{tt,\nu}\} = g^{ij}\{g_{j(t,t)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{tt,j}\} \\ &= g^{ij}\{0 - \frac{1}{2}h_{tt,j}\} = -\frac{1}{2}h^{ij}\{(-\frac{1}{N^2})_{,j}\} = -h^{ij}\frac{\partial_j N}{N}\end{aligned}\tag{2.183}$$

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma_{jk}^i &= g^{i\nu}\{g_{\nu(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{jk,\nu}\} = g^{il}\{g_{l(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{jk,l}\} \\ &= h^{il}\{h_{l(j,k)} - \frac{1}{2}h_{jk,l}\} = [\Gamma(h)]^i_{jk}\end{aligned}\tag{2.184}$$

$$\begin{aligned}\Gamma_{jt}^i &= g^{i\nu}\{g_{\nu(j,t)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{jt,\nu}\} = g^{ik}\{g_{k(j,t)} - \frac{1}{2}g_{jt,k}\} \\ &= g^{ik}\{\frac{1}{2}g_{kj,t} + \frac{1}{2}g_{kt,j} - \frac{1}{2}g_{jt,k}\} \\ &= \frac{1}{2}g^{ik}g_{kj,t} = \frac{1}{2}h^{ik}h_{kj,t}\end{aligned}\tag{2.185}$$

2.8.5 Collected results for the connection

There are a total of 6 sub-blocks to deal with:

$$\Gamma^t_{tt} = -\frac{1}{2}N^2\{(-\frac{1}{N^2})_{,t}\} = -\frac{\dot{N}}{N} \quad (2.186)$$

$$\Gamma^t_{ij} = N^2\{\frac{1}{2}h_{ij,t}\} \quad (2.187)$$

$$\Gamma^t_{ti} = \frac{1}{2}N^2\{(-\frac{1}{N^2})_{,i}\} = \frac{\partial_i N}{N} \quad (2.188)$$

$$\Gamma^i_{tt} = -\frac{1}{2}h^{ij}\{(-\frac{1}{N^2})_{,j}\} = -h^{ij}\frac{\partial_j N}{N} \quad (2.189)$$

$$\Gamma^i_{jk} = [\Gamma(h)]^i_{jk} \quad (2.190)$$

$$\Gamma^i_{jt} = \frac{1}{2}h^{ik}h_{kj,t} \quad (2.191)$$

2.9 Conclusion

In this section, we analysed a generic spacetime using both ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza-Klein) decompositions which split “spacetime” into “space” plus “time” in a natural way. We use the split to describe spacetime curvature in terms of the curvature of space and some additional structure. Furthermore, this decomposition encodes the four-metric of spacetime in terms of a time-varying three-metric on a three-dimensional domain together with the lapse and shift.

In addition, we used the Gauss-Codazzi and Gauss-Weingarten equations to decompose the (3+1)-dimensional spacetime curvature tensor in terms of the 3-dimensional spatial curvature tensor, the extrinsic curvature of the time slice [zero], and the gravitational potential. The ADM and reverse-ADM decompositions are identical in any static spacetime. In addition, we derived the standard results in equation (2.64) to (2.66) for the spacetime geometry in terms of the three geometry of space on a constant time slice, in which this three geometry is embedded into the spacetime. Finally, we derived equation (2.71) to (2.73) for the spacetime Einstein tensor.

We consider time dependent but block diagonal metrics in the ADM and reverse-ADM decompositions. When the “shift vector” is zero, the ADM and reverse-ADM decompositions are identical. Furthermore, we defined a quantity called the extrinsic

curvature in equation (2.75). We are able to calculate the Christoffel symbols of the first kind and second kind from section (2.7.1). Furthermore, we calculated the Riemann tensor by using the formula from (2.91) to (2.93). Whenever the metric g_{ab} block diagonalizes in the manner $g_{ab} = -c^2 \oplus h_{ij}$, then even if we allow arbitrary time dependence we have the relatively simple results as equation (2.102) to (2.104).

For a general stationary spacetime we need to use the full ADM decomposition. However, we have the simplification that all quantities are time independent. Indeed, the case for ADM decomposition is quite distinct from the reverse-ADM decomposition. The Christoffel symbols first kind are given in section (2.8.1). We derived the simplest expression for the Riemann tensor in terms of a coordinate basis.

For the general ADM case coordinate techniques are too complicated to contemplate (page 514 of [17]). Using the inverse-ADM decomposition we can calculate the Christoffel symbols from equation (2.178). Furthermore, we can split them up into sub-blocks in equation (2.179). Some of these blocks can interpreted in terms of Christoffel symbols of the 2 metrics $-1/N^2$ and h_{ij} see (2.8.4).

Chapter 3

Perfect fluid spheres in general relativity

3.1 Introduction

Perfect fluid spheres are interesting because they are first approximations to any attempt at building a realistic model for a general relativistic star [9, 11, 15, 20].

Although they represent a real and important astrophysical situation, explicit and full general solutions of the perfect fluid constraints in general relativity have only very recently been developed.

The first static spherically symmetric perfect fluid solution with constant density was found by Schwarzschild in 1918.

He found two exact solutions to Einstein's field equation — the “exterior solution” (relevant outside the star) and the “interior solution” (an approximation to what goes on inside the star). The so-called Schwarzschild solution is amazingly simple, especially in view of the field equations which are very complicated. Indeed, the exterior Schwarzschild solution is not a degenerate case for over-simplified situations but physically most meaningful. It is this solution by means of which one can explain most general relativistic effects in the planetary system. The reason is that it describes the gravitational field outside of a spherically symmetric body like the planets and the sun.

Over the past 90 years a confusing tangle of specific perfect fluid spheres has been discovered, with most of these examples seemingly independent from each other.

Many “ad hoc” tricks have been explored to solve this differential equation, often by picking special coordinate systems, or making simple ansatze for one or other of the metric components. The big change over the last several years has been the introduction of “algorithmic” techniques that permit one to generate large classes of perfect fluid spheres in a purely mechanical way. Perfect fluid spheres may be “simple”, but they still provide a surprisingly rich mathematical and physical structure.

In this chapter we will extend these algorithmic ideas, by proving several solution-generating theorems of varying levels of complexity. We shall then explore the formal properties of these solution-generating theorems and then will use these theorems to classify some of the previously known exact solution, and additionally will generate several previously unknown perfect fluid solutions.

3.2 Six theorems for generating perfect fluid spheres

Perfect fluid spheres, either Newtonian or relativistic, are the first approximations in developing realistic stellar models. Because of the importance of these models, fully general solutions of the perfect fluid constraint in general relativity have been developed over the last several years.

The central idea is to start solely with spherical symmetry, which implies that in orthonormal components the stress energy tensor takes the form

$$T_{\hat{a}\hat{b}} = \begin{bmatrix} \rho & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & p_r & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & p_t & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & p_t \end{bmatrix} \quad (3.1)$$

and then use the perfect fluid constraint $p_r = p_t$. This is making the radial pressure equal to the transverse pressure. By using the Einstein equations, plus spherical symmetry, the equality $p_r = p_t$ for the pressures becomes the statement

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}. \quad (3.2)$$

In terms of the metric components, this leads to an ordinary differential equation [ODE], which then constrains the spacetime geometry, for *any* perfect fluid sphere.

Over the last 90 years, many “ad hoc” approaches to solving this differential equation have been explored. We often solve it by picking special coordinate systems, or making simple ansatze for one or other of the metric components [3, 4, 5, 7, 8, 25]. (For recent overviews see [9, 11, 20]. For a table of “well-known” perfect fluid solutions see Table 3.2 on page 93.) The big recent change has been the discovery of “algorithmic” techniques that permit one to generate large classes of perfect fluid spheres in a purely mechanical way [13, 16, 18]. In addition, an alternative algorithmic approach is used to generate any spherically symmetric static solution of Einstein’s equation without recourse to the details of the material that makes it up.

Solution generating theorems

Algorithmic techniques

We would like to present “Algorithmic” techniques [16] that permit one to generate large classes of perfect fluid spheres in a purely mechanical way. The condition of hydrostatic equilibrium for *Newtonian* gravity is

$$\frac{dP_r}{dr} = -g(r)\rho(r) = -\frac{m(r)\rho(r)}{r^2}$$

where $g(r)$ is the local acceleration due to gravity, $m(r)$ is the mass contained within a radius r and $\rho(r)$ is the density.

We can simply calculate the mass within a radius r in terms of the density:

$$m(r) = 4\pi \int_0^r \bar{r}^2 \rho(\bar{r}) d\bar{r}.$$

When we used $\rho(r)$ as a known function, we have to solve a second–order differential equation:

$$\frac{d^2 P_r}{dr^2} + \left\{ \frac{2}{r} - \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dr} \right\} \frac{dP_r}{dr} + 4\pi\rho^2 = 0$$

We can solve for $P_r(r)$ in terms of an integral of the density:

$$P_r(r) = \int \frac{C_1 - 4\pi \int \bar{r}^2 \rho(\bar{r}) d\bar{r}}{r^2} \rho(r) dr + C_2.$$

We let $g(r)$ be an arbitrary function to solve simple algebra which allows us to find $m(r)$. The differentiation allows us to find $\rho(r)$ and then $P_r(r)$, respectively:

$$\begin{aligned} m(r) &= r^2 g(r) = 4\pi \int_0^r \bar{r}^2 \rho(\bar{r}) d\bar{r} \\ \Rightarrow \rho(r) &= \frac{2r g(r) + r^2 \frac{dg}{dr}}{4\pi r^2} \\ \Rightarrow P_r(r) &= -\frac{1}{2\pi} \int \frac{g(r)^2}{r} dr - \frac{1}{8\pi} g(r)^2 + P_r(0). \end{aligned}$$

In both the Newtonian and relativistic cases we have to ensure that the density is non-negative. The pressure is finite and non-negative.

Spherical symmetry

Spherically symmetric means “having the same symmetry as a sphere”. Indeed, “sphere” means S^2 , not spheres of higher dimension. Rather than the metric on a differentiable manifold, we are concerned with those metrics that have such symmetries. We can characterize symmetries of the metric. By the existence of Killing vectors, which we can see from the definition below. By demanding spherical symmetry we can simplify the equations of motion considerably. It turns out that for vacuum spherical symmetry of the metric automatically means the metric is static and asymptotically flat. This is Birkhoff’s theorem, a proof of which can be found in [19]. Furthermore, Spherical symmetry can be defined rigorously in terms of Killing vector fields as follows.

Definition 3. *A space-time is said to be spherically symmetric if and only if it admits three linearly independent spacelike Killing vector fields X^a whose orbits are closed (i.e. topological circles) and which satisfy*

$$[X^1, X^2] = X^3, \quad [X^2, X^3] = X^1, \quad [X^3, X^1] = X^2$$

Then there exists a coordinate system in which the Killing vectors take on a standard form as expressed in the following result.

Proposition 1. *In a spherically symmetric space-time, there exists a coordinate system (x^a) (called quasi Cartesian) in which the Killing fields X^a are of the form*

$$X^0 \rightarrow 0,$$

$$X^\alpha \rightarrow \omega^\alpha{}_\beta x^\beta, \quad \omega_{\alpha\beta} = -\omega_{\beta\alpha}.$$

In addition, we know that what the Killing vectors of S^2 are, and that there are three of them. Therefore, a spherically symmetric manifold is one that has three Killing vector fields which are the commutator of the Killing vectors which is the same in either case of those on S^2 .

Schwarzschild solution

The gravitational field of a homogenous spherically symmetric body is derived in firstly Newton's and then in Einstein's gravitational theory. The gravitational field of a simple Einsteinian model star consists of the exterior and the interior Schwarzschild solutions. They are joined together at the surface of the star.

The use of arbitrary coordinates is permitted in general relativity. Indeed, the physical significance of statements about tensor or vector components are other quantities which are not always obvious. However, there are some situations where the interpretation is almost as straightforward as in special relativity. The center point of a local inertial coordinate system is the most obvious example. Its coordinate system, where the principle of equivalence comes from, allows one to treat all local quantities exactly as in special relativity. Furthermore, Schwarzschild coordinates for a spherical system turn out to be a second example [17].

Schwarzschild geometry

The geometry of a spherical symmetric vacuum, i.e. vacuum spacetime outside the spherical black hole is the "Schwarzschild geometry" can be described in terms of the

Schwarzschild metric,

$$ds^2 = - \left(1 - \frac{2M}{r}\right) dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 - 2M/r} + r^2 d\Omega^2, \quad (3.3)$$

which was derived originally as the external field of a static star. The Schwarzschild metric seems to have a singularity at the surface where $r = 2M$ due to its coordinates, in which space and time change their meanings.

Schwarzschild geometry illustrates clearly the highly non-Euclidean character of spacetime geometry when gravity becomes strong. Furthermore, it illustrates many of techniques one can use to analyze strong gravitational fields. When appropriately truncated, it is the spacetime geometry of a black hole and of a collapsing star as well as of a wormhole [17].

However, that the Schwarzschild exterior solution is the unique spherically symmetric vacuum solution, is known as *Birkhoff's theorem*. This is a theorem of general relativity which states that all spherical gravitational fields, whether from a star or from a black hole, are indistinguishable at a large distances. A consequence of this is that purely radial changes in a spherical star do not affect its external gravitational field.

That the Schwarzschild geometry is relevant to gravitational collapse follows from “Birkhoff's theorem”.

Birkhoff's theorem: *Let the geometry of a given region of spacetime be spherically symmetric, and be a solution to the Einstein field equations in vacuum. Then that geometry is necessarily a piece of the Schwarzschild geometry* [17].

In particular, *Birkhoff's theorem* implies that if a spherically symmetric source like a star changes its size, however does so always remaining spherically symmetric, then it cannot propagate any disturbances into the surrounding space. From figure 3.1, shows that a pulsating spherically symmetric star cannot emit gravitational waves. If a spherically symmetric source is restricted to the region $r \leq a$ for some a , then the solution for $r > a$ must be the Schwarzschild solution, or can be called the Schwarzschild exterior solution. However, the converse is not true: a source which gives rise to an exterior Schwarzschild solution is not necessarily spherically symmetric. Some counter-examples are known. Therefore, in general, a source need not inherit the symmetry of

its external field. If we take the limit of equation 3.3 as $r \rightarrow \infty$, then the flat space Minkowski metric of special relativity in spherical polar coordinates is obtained, which is

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + dr^2 + r^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2). \quad (3.4)$$

This shows that a spherically symmetric vacuum solution is necessarily *asymptotically flat* [19].

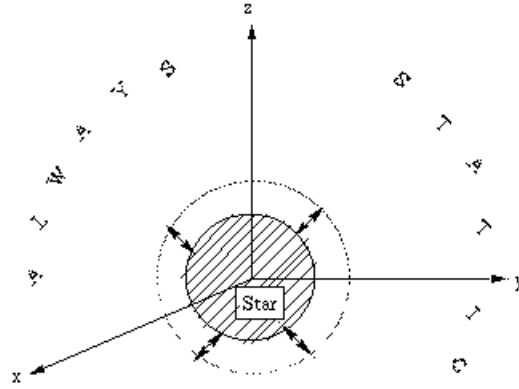


Figure 3.1: A Pulsating spherical star cannot emit gravitational waves.

Firstly, start with some static spherically symmetric geometry in Schwarzschild (curvature) coordinates

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (3.5)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. That is, $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$. While $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$ is always fulfilled due to spherical symmetry, we get a nontrivial constraint from $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}}$.

We calculate

$$G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = -\frac{2Br\zeta' - \zeta + \zeta B}{r^2\zeta} \quad (3.6)$$

and

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{B'\zeta + 2B\zeta' + 2Br\zeta'' + r\zeta'B'}{r\zeta} \quad (3.7)$$

We set $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$, which supplies us with an ODE:

$$[r(r\zeta)']B' + [2r^2\zeta'' - 2(r\zeta)']B + 2\zeta = 0. \quad (3.8)$$

This reduces the freedom to choose the two functions in equation (3.5) to one.

This equation is a first order-linear non-homogeneous equation in $B(r)$. Thus, once you have chosen a $\zeta(r)$ — this equation can always be solved for $B(r)$. Solving for $B(r)$ in terms of $\zeta(r)$ is the basis of [13, 16], (and is the basis for Theorem 1 below).

On the other hand, we can also re-group this same equation as

$$2r^2B\zeta'' + (r^2B' - 2rB)\zeta' + (rB' - 2B + 2)\zeta = 0, \quad (3.9)$$

which is a linear homogeneous 2nd order ODE for $\zeta(r)$, which will become the basis for Theorem 2 below. Thus, once you have chosen a $B(r)$ — this equation can always be solved for $\zeta(r)$. The question we are going to answer in this section is, how can one systematically “deform” this geometry while still retaining the perfect fluid property?

That is, suppose we start with the specific geometry defined by

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (3.10)$$

and assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. In the following section, we will show how to “deform” this solution by applying five different transformation theorems on $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$, such that the outcome still presents a perfect fluid sphere. The outcome of this process will depend on one or more free parameters, and so automatically generates an entire family of perfect fluid spheres of which the original starting point is only one member.

In addition, we analyze what happens if we apply these theorems more than once, iterating them in various ways. We also try to find the connection between all six different transformation theorems.

3.2.1 The first theorem

The first theorem we present is a variant of a result first explicitly published in [16], though another variant of this result can also be found in [20]. We first re-phrase the theorem in [16]. This is slightly different formalism, and demonstrate an independent way of proving it.

Definition (Idempotence): We call a transformation T idempotent if $\mathsf{T}^2 = \mathsf{T}$. Speaking loosely, we will call a *theorem* idempotent if whenever we apply the transformation more than once, no further solutions will be obtained.

We use our proof to show that the transformation in theorem 1 is (in a certain sense to be made precise below) “idempotent”. By applying theorem 1 more than once, no new solutions will be found. Furthermore, the idempotence property of theorem 1 and theorem 2, which we will soon establish, enables us to divide the class of perfect fluid spheres into seed metrics and non-seed metrics.

Theorem 1. *Suppose $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ represents a perfect fluid sphere. Define*

$$\Delta_0(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} \right)^2 r^2 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} dr \right\}. \quad (3.11)$$

Then for all λ , the geometry defined by holding $\zeta_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r) + \lambda \Delta_0(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (3.12)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_1(\lambda) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0(\zeta_0)\} \quad (3.13)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres. Furthermore a second application of the transformation does not yield new information, $T_1 = T_1(\sum \lambda_i)$ is “idempotent”, in the sense that

$$T_1(\lambda_n) \circ \cdots \circ T_1(\lambda_2) \circ T_1(\lambda_1) = T_1\left(\sum \lambda_i\right) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \left\{ \zeta_0, B_0 + \left(\sum_{i=1}^n \lambda_i \right) \Delta_0(\zeta_0) \right\} \quad (3.14)$$

We also note that T_1 always has an inverse

$$[T_1(\lambda)]^{-1} = T_1(-\lambda). \quad (3.15)$$

Proof for Theorem 1. Assume that $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ is a solution for equation (3.8).

We want to find under what conditions does $\{\zeta_0(r), B_1(r)\}$ also satisfy equation (3.8)? Without loss of generality, we write

$$B_1(r) = B_0(r) + \lambda \Delta_0(r). \quad (3.16)$$

Equation (3.8) can now be used to determine $\Delta_0(r)$. Substitute $B_1(r)$ in equation (3.8)

$$[r(r\zeta_0)'](B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0)' + [2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)'](B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0) + 2\zeta_0 = 0$$

we can also re-group this same equation as

$$[r(r\zeta_0)']B_0' + [2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)']B_0 + 2\zeta_0 + [r(r\zeta_0)']\Delta_0' + [2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)']\Delta_0 = 0$$

That ordinary *inhomogeneous* first-order differential equation in B now simplifies to

$$[r(r\zeta_0)']\Delta_0' + [2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)']\Delta_0 = 0, \quad (3.17)$$

which is an ordinary *homogeneous* first-order differential equation in Δ_0 .

Now we can calculate Δ_0 by following,

$$[r(r\zeta_0)']\Delta_0' = -[2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)']\Delta_0. \quad (3.18)$$

Rearrange it into

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\Delta_0'}{\Delta_0} &= \frac{-[2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)']}{[r(r\zeta_0)']} \\ &= \frac{-2r\zeta_0''}{(r\zeta_0)'} + \frac{2}{r} \end{aligned} \quad (3.19)$$

A straightforward calculation, including an integration by parts, leads to

$$\Delta_0(r) = \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ \int \frac{4\zeta_0'}{(r\zeta_0)'} dr \right\}. \quad (3.20)$$

We can also write this same equation as

$$\begin{aligned}\Delta_0(r) &= \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ 4 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{\zeta_0}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr \right\} \\ &= \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{\zeta_0}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr + 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{\zeta_0}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr \right\}. \quad (3.21)\end{aligned}$$

Adding and subtracting $\pm 2(r\zeta_0')/(\zeta_0(r\zeta_0'))$ to the argument under the integral leads to

$$\begin{aligned}\Delta_0(r) &= \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{\zeta_0}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr - 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{r\zeta_0'}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr \right\} \\ &\quad + \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{\zeta_0}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr + 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{r\zeta_0'}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr \right\}. \\ &= \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{(\zeta_0 - r\zeta_0')}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr + 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr \right\}. \quad (3.22)\end{aligned}$$

We can simplify to,

$$= \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{(\zeta_0 - r\zeta_0')}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr + 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} dr \right\}.$$

Furthermore,

$$= \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} \frac{(\zeta_0 - r\zeta_0')}{(\zeta_0 + r\zeta_0')} dr \right\} \exp(\ln(\zeta_0^2)).$$

Note that, $\exp(\ln(\zeta_0^2)) = \zeta_0^2$, so we can calculate

$$\Delta_0 = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta_0'(r)} \right)^2 r^2 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta_0'(r)} dr \right\}, \quad (3.23)$$

as previously illustrated.

If we apply this transformation a second time we obtain no additional information. To see this, consider the sequence

$$\{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_1\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_2\} \dots \quad (3.24)$$

But at the second step (and all subsequent steps), since ζ_0 has not changed, so $\Delta_1(r) = \Delta_0(r)$. More generally, at all stages of the iteration $\Delta_i(r) = \Delta_0(r)$. We can write this as

$$\prod_{i=1}^n T_1(\lambda_i) = T_1 \left(\sum_{i=1}^n \lambda_i \right). \quad (3.25)$$

or in the more suggestive form

$$\prod_{i=1}^n T_1 \triangleq T_1 \quad (3.26)$$

where the symbol \triangleq indicates “equality up to relabelling of the parameters”. That is, transformation T_1 is “idempotent” up to relabelling of the parameters (see figure 3.2). \square

A version of Theorem 1 can also be found in [20]. Specifically, after several manipulations, changes of notation, and a change of coordinate system, the transformation exhibited in equation (16.11) of [20] can be converted into Theorem 1 above.

Applying theorem 1 to a fixed $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ generates a one dimensional space of perfect fluid spheres, which leads to the corollary below:

Corollary 1. *Let $\{\zeta_0, B_a\}$ and $\{\zeta_0, B_b\}$ both represent perfect fluid spheres, then for all p*

$$\{\zeta_0, pB_a + (1 - p)B_b\} \quad (3.27)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, furthermore all perfect fluid spheres for a fixed ζ_0 can be written in this form.

Proof. The result is automatic once you note that for fixed ζ_0 the ODE for B is linear, (though not homogeneous, which is why the two coefficients p and $1 - p$ are chosen to add up to 1) . \square

We defer extensive discussion of the application of this theorem and its corollary until section 3.4, where we use this and our other generating theorems as a basis for classifying perfect fluid spheres. At this stage we mention, only as a very simple example, that T_1 applied to Minkowski space results in the geometry of the Einstein static universe.

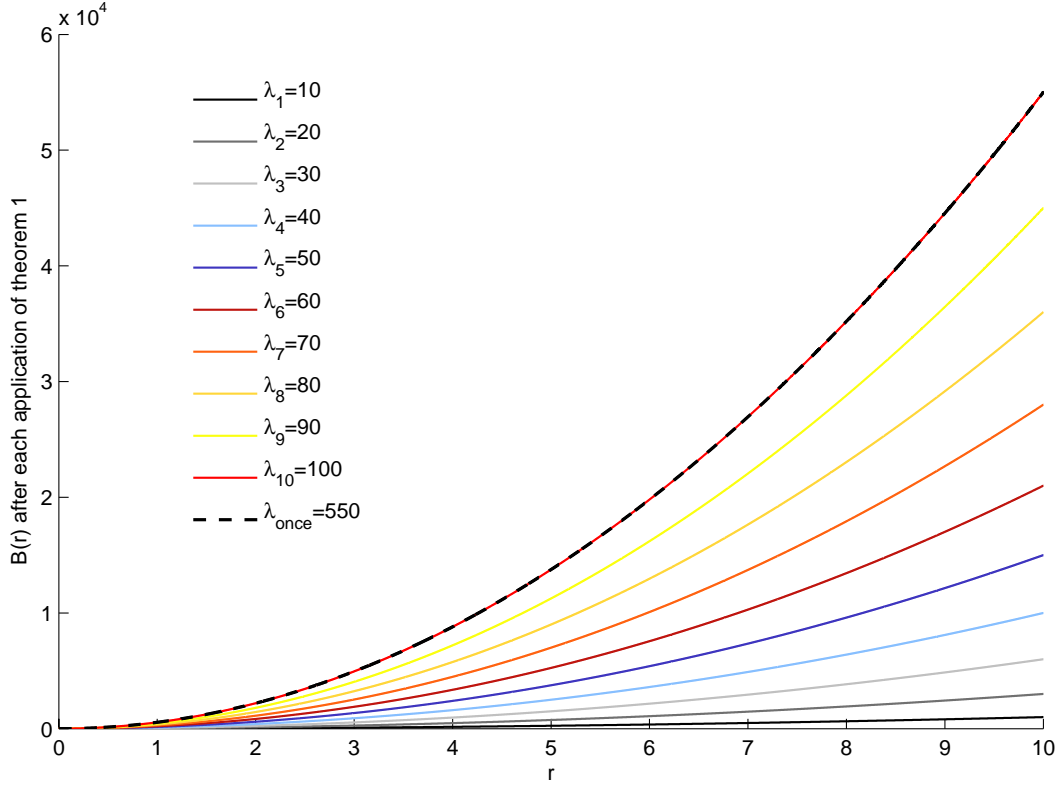


Figure 3.2: The solid lines show $B(r)$ for 10 reapplications of Theorem 1 onto the Minkowski metric. The dashed line corresponds to a single application with a specific choice for λ_{once} . It can be seen that 10 applications of Theorem 1 can be expressed by one application.



Figure 3.3: This structure shows that when we apply theorem 1 to Minkowski, we get an Einstein static universe as a new metric.

3.2.2 The second theorem

The second theorem we present is a new transformation theorem. This is a different formalism, and demonstrates our independent way of proving it. Furthermore, we would like to show the “idempotence” property of theorem 2 in this section.

Theorem 2. *Let $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ describe a perfect fluid sphere. Define*

$$Z_0(r) = \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}}. \quad (3.28)$$

Then for all σ and ϵ , the geometry defined by holding $B_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 Z_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (3.29)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_2(\sigma, \epsilon) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0 Z_0(\zeta_0, B_0), B_0\} \quad (3.30)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres. Furthermore a second application of the transformation does not yield new information, T_2 is “idempotent” in the sense that

$$T_2(\sigma_n, \epsilon_n) \circ \cdots \circ T_2(\sigma_3, \epsilon_3) \circ T_2(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ T_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = T_2(\sigma_n \cdots \sigma_3 \sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_{n \dots 321}), \quad (3.31)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} \epsilon_{n \dots 321} &= (\epsilon_1 \sigma_2 \sigma_3 \cdots \sigma_n) + (\sigma_1^{-1} \epsilon_2 \sigma_3 \cdots \sigma_n) + (\sigma_1^{-1} \sigma_2^{-1} \epsilon_3 \cdots \sigma_n) \\ &\quad + \cdots + (\sigma_1^{-1} \sigma_2^{-1} \sigma_3^{-1} \cdots \epsilon_n). \end{aligned} \quad (3.32)$$

Furthermore, theorem 2 is invertible (as long as $\sigma \neq 0$):

$$[T_2(\sigma, \epsilon)]^{-1} = T_2(1/\sigma, -\epsilon). \quad (3.33)$$

Reduction of order:

This is a method to find a general solution to a linear differential equation, provided you already have one particular solution. In this method, we start with an n^{th} -order linear differential equation. This method is especially useful in solving a second-order linear differential equation. It reduces the problem to one for solving a first-order linear differential equation.

Proof for Theorem 2. The proof of theorem 2 is based on the technique of “reduction in order”. Assuming that $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ solves equation (3.9), write

$$\zeta_1(r) = \zeta_0(r) Z_0(r). \quad (3.34)$$

and demand that $\{\zeta_1(r), B_0(r)\}$ also solves equation (3.9). We find

$$2r^2 B_0 (\zeta_0 Z_0)'' + (r^2 B_0' - 2r B_0) (\zeta_0 Z_0)' + (r B_0' - 2B_0 + 2) (\zeta_0 Z_0) = 0 \quad (3.35)$$

we can expand the above equation to

$$\begin{aligned} & 2r^2 B_0 (\zeta_0'' Z_0 + 2\zeta_0' Z_0' + \zeta_0 Z_0'') + (r^2 B_0' - 2r B_0) (\zeta_0' Z_0 + \zeta_0 Z_0') \\ & + (r B_0' - 2B_0 + 2) (\zeta_0 Z_0) = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (3.36)$$

we can also re-group this same equation as

$$\begin{aligned} & \{2r^2 B_0 \zeta_0'' + (r^2 B_0' - 2r B_0) \zeta_0' + (r B_0' - 2B_0 + 2) \zeta_0\} Z_0 \\ & + (r^2 \zeta_0 B_0' + 4r^2 \zeta_0' B_0 - 2r \zeta_0 B_0) Z_0' + (2r^2 \zeta_0 B_0) Z_0'' = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (3.37)$$

This linear homogeneous 2nd order ODE for Z_0 now simplifies to

$$(r^2 \zeta_0 B_0' + 4r^2 \zeta_0' B_0 - 2r \zeta_0 B_0) Z_0' + (2r^2 \zeta_0 B_0) Z_0'' = 0, \quad (3.38)$$

which is an ordinary homogeneous second-order differential equation, depending only on Z_0' and Z_0'' . (So it can be viewed as a first-order homogeneous order differential equation in Z_0' , which is solvable.) Separating the unknown variable to one side,

$$\frac{Z_0''}{Z_0'} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{B_0'}{B_0} - 2 \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} + \frac{1}{r}. \quad (3.39)$$

Re-write $Z_0''/Z_0' = d \ln(Z_0')/dt$, and integrate twice over both sides of equation (3.39), to obtain

$$Z_0 = \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}}, \quad (3.40)$$

depending on the old solution $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$, and two arbitrary integration constants σ and ϵ .

To see that the transformation T_2 defined in Theorem 2 is “idempotent” we first show

$$T_2 \circ T_2 \triangleq T_2, \quad (3.41)$$

and then iterate. The precise two-step composition rule is

$$T_2(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ T_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = T_2 \left(\sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_1 \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right). \quad (3.42)$$

In this section we consider a two-step composition rule to find idempotence. In particular, the most outstanding features of these steps are:

- To see “idempotence”, note that for fixed $B_0(r)$ equation (3.9) has a solution space that is exactly two dimensional.
- Since the first application of T_2 takes any specific solution and maps it into the full two-dimensional solution space, any subsequent application of T_2 can do no more than move one around inside this two dimensional solution space — physically this corresponds to a relabelling of parameters describing the perfect fluid metric you are dealing with, not the generation of new solutions.

To be more explicit about this note that at step one

$$\zeta_0 \rightarrow \zeta_1 = \zeta_0 \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \right\}, \quad (3.43)$$

while at the second step

$$\zeta_1 \rightarrow \zeta_2 = \zeta_1 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_1(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \right\}. \quad (3.44)$$

That is:

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_2 &= \zeta_0 \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \right\} \\ &\times \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)} \left[\sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int r \, dr / (\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}) \right]^2} \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (3.45)$$

But this can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned}
\zeta_2 &= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int \frac{dZ_0}{Z_0^2} \right\} \\
&= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int d \left(\frac{1}{Z_0} \right) \right\} \\
&= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \left[\frac{1}{Z_0} - \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] \right\}.
\end{aligned} \tag{3.46}$$

Therefore

$$\zeta_2 = \zeta_0 \left\{ -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0 \right\}. \tag{3.47}$$

That is

$$Z_1 = -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0, \tag{3.48}$$

$$= \sigma_2 \sigma_1 + \left(\sigma_2 \epsilon_1 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right) \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \tag{3.49}$$

from which the composition law

$$\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = \mathsf{T}_2 \left(\sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_1 \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right) \tag{3.50}$$

follows immediately. (Note that the composition law for T_2 is actually a statement about applying reduction of order to 2nd-order ODEs, it is not specifically a statement about perfect fluid spheres, though that is how we will use it in the thesis). The general composition law then follows by induction. To find the inverse transformation we choose $\sigma_2 = 1/\sigma_1$ and $\epsilon_1 = -\epsilon_2$, for which

$$\mathsf{T}_2(1/\sigma_1, -\epsilon_1) \circ \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = \mathsf{T}_2(1, 0) = \mathbf{I}. \tag{3.51}$$

□

Comment: As other special cases of the composition law we will also mention the results that

$$\prod_{i=1}^n \mathsf{T}_2(1, \epsilon_i) = \mathsf{T}_2 \left(1, \sum_{i=1}^n \epsilon_i \right), \tag{3.52}$$

and

$$\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon)^n = \mathsf{T}_2\left(\sigma^n, \epsilon \left[\sigma^{n-1} + \sigma^{n-3} \dots + \sigma^{-(n-3)} + \sigma^{-(n-1)}\right]\right). \quad (3.53)$$

Now as long as $\sigma > 1$ then for sufficiently large n we see

$$\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon)^n \approx \mathsf{T}_2\left(\sigma^n, \sigma^{n-1}\epsilon\right) = \sigma^{n-1} \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon) \triangleq \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon), \quad (3.54)$$

where at the last step we have used the fact that the overall multiplicative factor σ^{n-1} can simply be reabsorbed into a redefinition of the time coordinate. Because of this result, we see that for fixed $\sigma > 1$ (and fixed but arbitrary ϵ) repeated numerical applications of $\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon)$ will have a well-defined limit. In figure 3.4 we have tested the composition law numerically.

A strictly limited version of theorem 2, with little comment on its importance, can be found in [20]. Specifically, after several manipulations, changes of notation, and a change of coordinate system, the transformation exhibited in equation (16.12) of [20] can be seen to be equivalent to the sub-case $\sigma = 0$, $\epsilon = 1$ of theorem 2 above.

For some purposes it is more useful to rephrase theorem 2 as below:

Corollary 2. *Let $\{\zeta_a, B_0\}$ and $\{\zeta_b, B_0\}$ both represent perfect fluid spheres, then for all p and q*

$$\{p \zeta_a + q \zeta_b, B_0\} \quad (3.55)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. Furthermore, for fixed B_0 all perfect fluid spheres can be written in this form.

Proof. The result is automatic once you note that for fixed B_0 the 2nd order ODE for ζ is linear and homogeneous. \square

We defer extensive discussion about the application of these theorems and corollary until section 3.4, which cover the following:

- A simple example involving T_2 applied to either the Einstein static universe or the anti-de Sitter universe results in Schwarzschild's stellar solution (position-independent density).
- Similarly, corollary 2 applied to a combination of the Einstein static universe and anti-de Sitter space is another way of obtaining Schwarzschild's stellar solution.

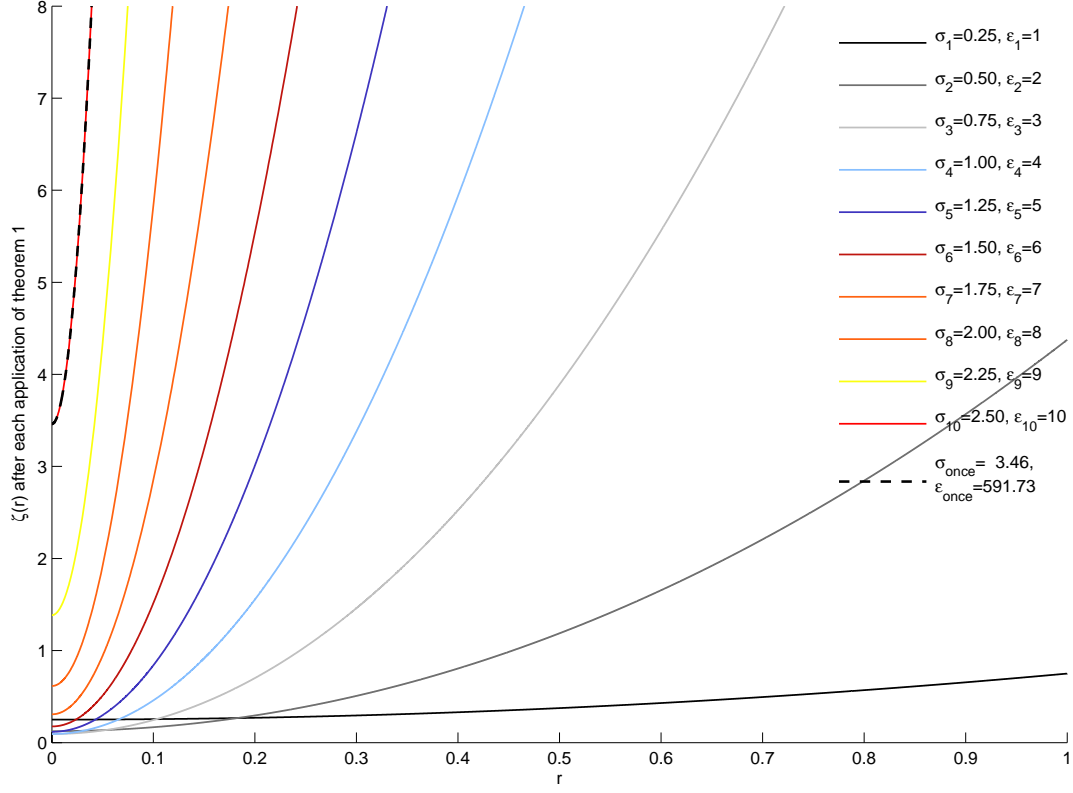


Figure 3.4: The solid lines show $\zeta(r)$ for 10 reapplications of Theorem 2 onto the Minkowski metric. The dashed line corresponds to a single application with a specific choice for σ_{once} and ϵ_{once} . It can be seen that 10 applications of Theorem 2 can be expressed by one application.

Note that when comparing the results of our computations with the extant literature we shall adopt the naming conventions of the review article by Delgaty and Lake [9]. For example, some of the less standard names are:

- K-O III: The third spacetime considered by Korkina and Orlyanskii.
- M-W III: The third spacetime considered by Matese and Whitman.
- B-L: The spacetime considered by Buchdahl and Land.
- Kuch: One of several spacetimes considered by Kuchowicz.
- Heint: One of several spacetime considered by Heintmann.

References to the primary literature can be found in Delgaty and Lake [9]. We also add several new abbreviations:

- Martin: One of several spacetimes considered by Martin and Visser.
- S1: A special name for a particularly simple spacetime.
- P1-P8: Special names for several apparently new perfect fluid spacetimes.

See in particular tables (3.2) and (3.3) for the spacetime metrics corresponding to these geometries.

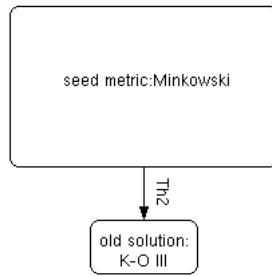


Figure 3.5: This structure shows that when we apply theorem 2 to Minkowski, we get the K-O III geometry.

3.2.3 The third and fourth theorems

Having now found the first and second generating theorems, is now useful to define two new theorems by composing them. What we are going to show in the following section is how to deform the geometry while still retaining the perfect fluid property. To further illustrate the formalism, we will show how to classify perfect fluid spheres by using two new generating theorems. We present theorem 3 by taking a perfect fluid sphere solution $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ and applying theorem 1 onto it which gives us a new perfect fluid sphere $\{\zeta_0, B_1\}$. The new B_1 is given in equation (3.11). We now continue with applying theorem 2, again we get a new solution $\{\tilde{\zeta}, B_1\}$, where $\tilde{\zeta}$ now depends on

the new B_1 . All together we can consider this as a single process by introducing the following theorem:

Theorem 3. *If $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ denotes a perfect fluid sphere, then for all σ , ϵ , and λ , the three-parameters geometry defined by*

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r) + \lambda \Delta_0(r)}} \right\}^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r) + \lambda \Delta_0(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (3.56)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, where Δ_0 is

$$\Delta_0(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} \right)^2 r^2 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} dr \right\}. \quad (3.57)$$

That is

$$\begin{aligned} T_3 &= T_2 \circ T_1 : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0(\zeta_0)\} \\ &\mapsto \{\zeta_0 Z_0(\zeta_0, B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0(\zeta_0)), B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0(\zeta_0)\}. \end{aligned} \quad (3.58)$$

Now we would like to present another new theorem. Instead of starting with theorem 1 we could first apply theorem 2 on $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$. This gives us a new perfect fluid sphere $\{\zeta_1, B_0\}$, where $\zeta_1 = \zeta_0 Z_0(\zeta_0, B_0)$ is given by equation (3.40). We now continue with theorem 1 which leads to $\{\zeta_1, \tilde{B}\}$ where \tilde{B} depends on the new ζ_1 . Again, we can consider this as a single process by introducing the following theorem:

Theorem 4. *If $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ denotes a perfect fluid sphere, then for all σ , ϵ , and λ , the three-parameters geometry are defined by*

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \right\}^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r) + \lambda \Delta_0(\zeta_1, r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (3.59)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, where $\Delta_0(\zeta_1, r)$ is defined as

$$\Delta_0(\zeta_1, r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_1(r)}{\zeta_1(r) + r \zeta'_1(r)} \right)^2 r^2 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'_1(r)}{\zeta_1(r)} \frac{\zeta_1(r) - r \zeta'_1(r)}{\zeta_1(r) + r \zeta'_1(r)} dr \right\}, \quad (3.60)$$

depending on $\zeta_1 = \zeta_0 Z_0$, where as before

$$Z_0(r) = \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}}. \quad (3.61)$$

That is

$$\begin{aligned} T_4 &= T_1 \circ T_2 : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0 Z_0(\zeta_0, B_0), B_0\} \\ &\mapsto \{\zeta_0 Z_0(\zeta_0, B_0), B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0(\zeta_0 Z_0(\zeta_0, B_0))\}. \end{aligned} \quad (3.62)$$

In addition, we analyze what happens, if we apply theorems 3 or 4 more than once. Some general comments about both new transformation theorems:

- Theorem 3 and theorem 4 are in general distinct, which can be traced back to the fact that theorem 1 and theorem 2 do not in general commute.
- Theorem 3 and theorem 4 are in general not idempotent. That means when we apply theorem 3 more than once further distinct solutions will be obtained. Similarly for theorem 4.

In addition, these comments can be described in terms of the equations below.

$$T_3 \not\equiv T_4; \quad T_3 \circ T_3 \not\equiv T_3; \quad T_4 \circ T_4 \not\equiv T_4. \quad (3.63)$$

The best way to verify this is to try a few specific examples. There may be some specific and isolated special metrics for which theorem 3 and theorem 4 happen to be degenerate, or idempotent, and finding such metrics is important for our classification programme.

3.2.4 Formal properties of the generating theorems

The solution generating theorems we have developed interact in a number of interesting ways and exhibit numerous formal properties that will be useful when classifying generic perfect fluid spheres. To start with, theorem 3 (T_3) and theorem 4 (T_4) can be expressed in terms of theorem 1 (T_1) and theorem 2 (T_2):

$$\begin{aligned} T_3(g) &:= (T_2 \circ T_1) g = T_2(T_1(g)) ; \\ T_4(g) &:= (T_1 \circ T_2) g = T_1(T_2(g)) . \end{aligned} \quad (3.64)$$

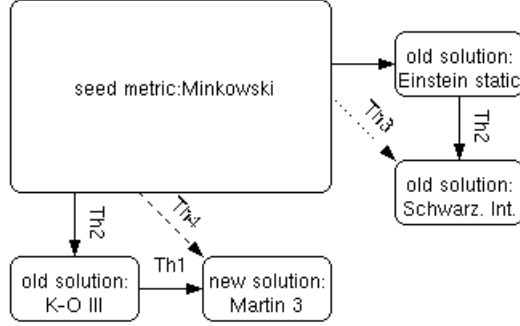


Figure 3.6: This structure shows that Theorem 3 and theorem 4 are in general distinct. When we apply theorem 3 to Minkowski, we get the Schwarzschild Interior geometry, while applying theorem 4 to the Minkowski, we get Martin 3 .

where g is a metric representing a perfect fluid sphere. Having this in mind, some of the new solutions generated by starting from some specific solution can be identified. For example:

$$T_4 \circ T_1 \equiv T_1 \circ T_2 \circ T_1 \equiv T_1 \circ T_3, \quad (3.65)$$

or

$$T_3 \circ T_3 \equiv T_2 \circ T_1 \circ T_2 \circ T_1 \equiv T_2 \circ T_4 \circ T_1. \quad (3.66)$$

The idempotence of T_1 and T_2 in this formalism is:

$$\begin{aligned} (T_1 \circ T_1) g &= T_1(T_1(g)) \triangleq T_1(g); \\ (T_2 \circ T_2) g &= T_2(T_2(g)) \triangleq T_2(g). \end{aligned} \quad (3.67)$$

Taken together, it is possible to simplify all formulae wherever T_1 and T_2 appear next to each other more than once. The following examples should demonstrate how this works:

$$\begin{aligned} (T_2 \circ T_3) g &\equiv (T_2 \circ T_2 \circ T_1) g \triangleq (T_2 \circ T_1) g \equiv T_3(g); \\ (T_1 \circ T_4) g &\equiv (T_1 \circ T_1 \circ T_2) g \triangleq (T_1 \circ T_2) g \equiv T_4(g), \end{aligned} \quad (3.68)$$

and in the same way

$$\begin{aligned} T_4 \circ T_3 &\equiv T_1 \circ T_2 \circ T_2 \circ T_1 \triangleq T_1 \circ T_2 \circ T_1 \equiv T_1 \circ T_3 \equiv T_4 \circ T_1; \\ T_3 \circ T_4 &\equiv T_2 \circ T_1 \circ T_1 \circ T_2 \triangleq T_2 \circ T_1 \circ T_2 \equiv T_2 \circ T_4 \equiv T_3 \circ T_2. \end{aligned} \quad (3.69)$$

These relationships can be used to structure the solution set generated starting from any particular perfect fluid sphere, and moreover to classify which metrics can be produced by our theorems, and which ones cannot. For example, the idempotence property of theorem 1 and theorem 2 enables us to divide the class of perfect fluid spheres into seed metrics and non-seed metrics. Seed metrics can never be generated by using one of the two theorems T_1 or T_2 , while non-seed metrics are connected to other simpler metrics via one of these theorems. We formalize this in the following subsection.

3.2.5 Seed and non-seed metrics

Definition (Seed metric): Take a metric g (or a parameterized class of metrics) and apply theorem 1 or theorem 2 on it. Three different cases are possible:

- Each of the applications supplies us with a new solution. [$T_1(g) \not\triangleq g \not\triangleq T_2(g)$.] We define a metric with this behaviour as a seed metric. (We shall soon see several examples of this behaviour.) For example, figure 2.5 show that Minkowski is a seed metric. When we apply theorem 1 to it, we get Einstein static. While applying theorem 2 to Minkowski, we get K-O III instead.
- Only one of the applications supplies us with a new solution, while the other one gives us the same metric we started with. [$T_1(g) \triangleq g$ or $T_2(g) \triangleq g$.] These metrics are non-seed metrics. (We shall soon see several examples of this behaviour.) For example, figure 2.5 show that Einstein static and K-O III are both non-seed metric. The reason is only one of the applications gives us a new solution, while the other one still give us the same metric which are Einstein static and K-O III, respectively.
- Both applications give us the same metric we started with. [$T_1(g) \triangleq g \triangleq T_2(g)$.] Metrics of this type are fixed points of the transformation process and we then

also have $T_3(g) \triangleq g \triangleq T_4(g)$. While we have encountered numerical examples that seem to exhibit this behaviour, we have no analytic proof for the existence of non-obvious fixed-point metrics. There is one obvious but not particularly useful example of a fixed point class of metrics. If we take the ODE in equation (3.8), and write down its most general solution as a function of the arbitrary parameters $\zeta(r)$, then any of our solution generating theorems applied to this most general solutions will at most move us around in the parameter space characterizing the most general solution — the most general solution of equation (3.8), or equivalently equation (3.9), is thus an infinite-parameter fixed point of the generating theorems. But apart from this obvious example, it is unclear whether other fixed point classes of metric exist.

Classifying seed and non-seed metrics are very important. In particular, the most outstanding features of this algorithm are:

- We developed a tool to generate new solutions for a perfect fluid sphere, which does not require to solve the Einstein equations.
- We also established the relationships among the generating theorems. Before all metrics seem to have nothing more in common than presenting a perfect fluid sphere.
- We invented the concept of a seed metric, which cannot be generated by our theorems. Starting with such a metric, a class of non-seed metric can be produced.
- This can be used to structure the solutions generated by a perfect fluid sphere and classify which metrics can and cannot be produced by our theorems.

We can nevertheless develop several formal lemmata regarding fixed-point metrics. For instance

Lemma 1. *Suppose we have a metric such that $\forall \sigma, \epsilon, \lambda$*

$$T_3(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda) g \triangleq g, \tag{3.70}$$

Examples of some seed and non-seed metrics

Seed metric	Non-Seed metric
Minkowski	B-L
Exterior Schwarzschild	Interior Schwarzschild
de Sitter	Einstein static
Tolman IV ($A = 0$)	Tolman IV , Tolman V ($n = +1$) , Tolman VI
M-W III	K-O III
Heint IIa ($C=0$)	Heint IIa
S1	Wyman IIa, Wyman III

Table 3.1: This table shows several seed and non-seed metrics, which satisfied the definition of seed and non-seed metrics (see Table 3.2 for further details).

where we recall that \triangleq denotes equality up to redefinition of parameters. Then in particular

$$T_1(\lambda) g \triangleq g \triangleq T_2(\sigma, \epsilon) g, \quad (3.71)$$

and so

$$T_4(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda) g \triangleq g. \quad (3.72)$$

Conversely, suppose we have a metric such that

$$T_4(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda) g \triangleq g, \quad (3.73)$$

then

$$T_1(\lambda) g \triangleq g \triangleq T_2(\sigma, \epsilon) g, \quad (3.74)$$

and so

$$T_3(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda) g \triangleq g. \quad (3.75)$$

Proof. Trivial, note that $T_3(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda = 0) = T_2(\sigma, \epsilon)$ and $T_3(\sigma = 0, \epsilon = 0, \lambda) = T_1(\lambda)$. Then recall $T_4 = T_1 \circ T_2$. Similarly for the converse. \square

Lemma 2. *Suppose we have a metric g such that*

$$T_4 g \triangleq T_3 g \quad (3.76)$$

and then define g' by

$$T_4 g \triangleq g' \triangleq T_3 g. \quad (3.77)$$

Then we have

$$T_4 g' \triangleq g' \triangleq T_3 g' \quad (3.78)$$

so that g' is a “fixed point” of both T_3 and T_4 .

Proof. Note

$$T_4 g' \triangleq T_4 \circ T_3 g \triangleq T_1 \circ T_2 \circ T_1 g \triangleq T_1 \circ T_3 g \triangleq T_1 \circ T_4 g \triangleq T_4 g = g' \quad (3.79)$$

and similarly for T_3 :

$$T_3 g' \triangleq T_3 \circ T_4 g \triangleq T_2 \circ T_1 \circ T_2 g \triangleq T_2 \circ T_4 g \triangleq T_2 \circ T_3 g \triangleq T_3 g = g' \quad (3.80)$$

□

Several other formal theorems along these lines can be constructed, but these seem the most important results.

Finally, among the formal properties enjoyed by the generating theorems, we mention the fact that theorems 3 and 4 are “conjugate” to each other in the following sense

$$T_4 \equiv T_1 \circ T_2 = T_1 \circ T_2 \circ T_1 \circ [T_1]^{-1} = T_1 \circ T_3 \circ [T_1]^{-1}, \quad (3.81)$$

and similarly (when the appropriate inverse $[T_2]^{-1}$ exists)

$$T_3 \equiv T_2 \circ T_1 = T_2 \circ T_1 \circ T_2 \circ [T_2]^{-1} = T_2 \circ T_4 \circ [T_2]^{-1}. \quad (3.82)$$

We can write this as

$$T_3(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda) \sim T_4(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda), \quad (3.83)$$

where \sim denotes the concept of “similarity” under conjugation by invertible generating theorems.

In these properties we would like to ensure that

- We wish to emphasise that similarity \sim is a statement that holds for particular and fixed values of the parameters $(\sigma, \epsilon, \lambda)$, as opposed to \triangleq which denotes equivalence under redefinition of parameters.
- If one is working numerically, it is much easier to ask questions involving similarity \sim . For analytic work, it is typically easier to ask questions involving equivalence \triangleq .

3.2.6 The fifth and sixth theorems

Two linking theorems

The last two solution generating theorems we shall present are slightly different from those developed so far: Consider a perfect fluid sphere solution $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ and extend it to a new perfect fluid sphere $\{\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta\}$. Previously, we had either set $Z_0 = 1$ and obtained theorem 1, or we had set $\Delta = 0$ and obtained theorem 2. In other words, we only changed one metric component at a time. (From this point of view theorem 3 and theorem 4 are, strictly speaking, not new theorems, in that they are replaceable by iterations of theorem 1 and theorem 2 and vice versa.) We now investigate what happens if we place no *a priori* restrictions on Z and Δ , and allow both metric components to vary simultaneously. The differential equation (3.8) for this problem now becomes

$$\begin{aligned} [r(r\zeta_0 Z_0)'] \Delta' &+ [2r^2(\zeta_0 Z_0)'' - 2(r\zeta_0 Z_0)'] \Delta \\ &+ [r^2\zeta_0 B_0' + 4r^2\zeta_0' B_0 - 2r\zeta_0 B_0] Z_0' + 2r^2\zeta_0 B_0 Z_0'' = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (3.84)$$

Note that if $\Delta = 0$ this becomes equation (3.17), while if $Z_0 = 1$ this becomes equation (3.38). In general, this ODE of first-order in Δ , and — as long Z is not a constant — inhomogeneous. In terms of Δ this ODE can be solved explicitly and the result stated as a new theorem:

Theorem 5. *Suppose $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ describes a perfect fluid sphere, and let $Z_0(r)$ be arbitrary.*

trary. Define

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta(\lambda, r) = \Delta_0(r) & \left\{ \lambda - \int \frac{[(4r^2\zeta'_0 B_0 + r^2\zeta_0 B'_0 - 2r\zeta_0 B_0) Z'_0 + 2r^2\zeta_0 B_0 Z''_0] \{\zeta_0 + r\zeta'_0\}^2}{r^3 (r\zeta_0 Z_0)' \zeta_0^2 Z_0^2} \right. \\ & \left. \exp \left\{ -2 \int \frac{(\zeta_0 Z_0)'}{\zeta_0 Z_0} \frac{\zeta_0 Z_0 - r (\zeta_0 Z_0)'}{\zeta_0 Z_0 + r (\zeta_0 Z_0)'} dr \right\} dr \right\}, \end{aligned} \quad (3.85)$$

where

$$\Delta_0(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_0 Z_0}{\zeta_0 Z_0 + r (\zeta_0 Z_0)'} \right)^2 r^2 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{(\zeta_0 Z_0)'}{\zeta_0 Z_0} \frac{\zeta_0 Z_0 - r (\zeta_0 Z_0)'}{\zeta_0 Z_0 + r (\zeta_0 Z_0)'} dr \right\}. \quad (3.86)$$

Then for all λ , the geometry defined by an arbitrary chosen $Z_0(r)$ and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 Z_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r) + \Delta(\lambda, r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (3.87)$$

corresponds to a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_5(\lambda) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta(\lambda, \zeta_0)\} \quad (3.88)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.

Note that if $Z_0(r) = 1$ this simply reduces to theorem 1. Re-arranging equation (3.84) in terms of Z_0 leads to a second-order inhomogenous differential equation, which cannot in general be solved for a prescribed Δ , *unless one imposes further constraints*. So further exploration in that direction is moot. There is however a related theorem (which may be easier to understand) in terms of parametric derivatives:

Theorem 6. *Let $\{\zeta(\mu), B(\mu)\}$ denote a one-parameter class of perfect fluid spheres, so that the differential equation (3.8) is satisfied for all μ . Then*

$$\begin{aligned} [r(r\zeta)'] \left(\frac{dB}{d\mu} \right)' + [2r^2\zeta'' - 2(r\zeta)'] \left(\frac{dB}{d\mu} \right) + 2r^2 B \left(\frac{d\zeta}{d\mu} \right)'' \\ + (r^2 B' - 2rB) \left(\frac{d\zeta}{d\mu} \right)' + (rB' - 2B + 2) \left(\frac{d\zeta}{d\mu} \right) = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (3.89)$$

In particular if $d\zeta/d\mu = 0$ this reduces to the ODE (3.17), while if $dB/d\mu = 0$ this reduces to the ODE (3.9).

This is simply an alternative viewpoint on the previous theorem, emphasising the differential equation to be solved.

We again defer extensive discussion to the next section, but that this stage point out that if we invoke theorem 5 and apply it to Minkowski space, then making the choice $Z_0 = 1 + r^2/a^2$ leads to the general Tolman IV metric — that is:

$$T_5(\text{Minkowski}; Z_0 = 1 + r^2/a^2) = (\text{Tolman IV}). \quad (3.90)$$

Even before we systematically start our classification efforts, it is clear that the solution generating theorems we have established will inter-relate *many* of the standard perfect fluid spheres.

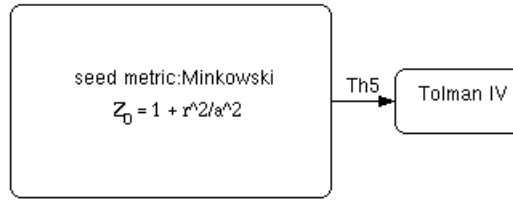


Figure 3.7: This structure shows that when we invoke theorem 5 and apply it to Minkowski space, then making the choice $Z_0 = 1 + r^2/a^2$ leads to the general Tolman IV metric.

3.3 Formal properties of the linking theorems

Before turning to issues of systematic classification of perfect fluid metrics, we wish to establish a few formal properties of the linking theorems. To simplify the notation, let us define the differential expression

$$\begin{aligned} D(\zeta, B) &\equiv [r(r\zeta)']B' + [2r^2\zeta'' - 2(r\zeta)']B + 2\zeta \\ &= 2r^2B\zeta'' + (r^2B' - 2rB)\zeta' + (rB' - 2B + 2)\zeta. \end{aligned} \quad (3.91)$$

Then the condition for a perfect fluid sphere is simply

$$D(\zeta, B) = 0 \quad (3.92)$$

Now define

$$D(\zeta_0, B_0 + \Delta_0) = D(\zeta_0, B_0) + D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) \quad (3.93)$$

Then it is easy to check that

$$D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) = [r(r\zeta_0)'] \Delta'_0 + [2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)'] \Delta_0 \quad (3.94)$$

The ODE for theorem 1, where we assume $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ is a perfect fluid sphere, is then

$$D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) = 0. \quad (3.95)$$

Now define

$$D(\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0) = Z_0 D(\zeta_0, B_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0), \quad (3.96)$$

then it is easy to check that

$$D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = (r^2\zeta_0 B'_0 + 4r^2\zeta'_0 B_0 - 2r\zeta_0 B_0) Z'_0 + (2r^2\zeta_0 B_0) Z''_0. \quad (3.97)$$

The ODE for theorem 2, where we assume $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ is a perfect fluid sphere, is then

$$D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0. \quad (3.98)$$

Now let us consider any simultaneous shift in ζ and B , as considered in theorem 5. We have

$$\begin{aligned} D(\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0) &= D(\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0) + D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0) \\ &= Z_0 D(\zeta_0, B_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) + D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0). \end{aligned} \quad (3.99)$$

But now let us write

$$D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0) = Z_0 D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) + D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0), \quad (3.100)$$

where a brief computation yields

$$D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) = r^2\zeta_0 Z'_0 \Delta'_0 + [2r^2\zeta_0 Z''_0 + 4r^2\zeta'_0 Z'_0 - 2r\zeta_0 Z'_0] \Delta_0. \quad (3.101)$$

Then all in all

$$\begin{aligned} D(\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0) &= Z_0 D(\zeta_0, B_0) + Z_0 D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) \\ &\quad + D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0). \end{aligned} \quad (3.102)$$

So if $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ and $\{\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0\}$ are both perfect fluid spheres we must have

$$Z_0 D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) + D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0. \quad (3.103)$$

This is

$$Z_0 \times (\text{ODE for theorem1}) + (\text{cross term}) + (\text{ODE for theorem2}) = 0. \quad (3.104)$$

The cross term vanishes if either $Z_0 = \text{constant}$ or $\Delta_0 = 0$ in which case we recover the usual theorem 1 and theorem 2. If we do things in the opposite order

$$D(\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0) = Z_0 D(\zeta_0, B_0 + \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0 + \Delta_0; Z_0); \quad (3.105)$$

$$= Z_0 D(\zeta_0, B_0) + Z_0 D_1(\zeta_0, \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0 + \Delta_0; Z_0). \quad (3.106)$$

We now have to compute

$$D_2(\zeta_0, B_0 + \Delta_0; Z_0) = D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) + D_{21}(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0, \Delta_0), \quad (3.107)$$

and after a brief computation

$$\begin{aligned} D_{21}(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) &= 2r^2 \zeta_0 \Delta_0 Z_0'' + [r^2 \zeta_0 \Delta_0' + 4r^2 \zeta_0' \Delta_0 - 2r \zeta_0 \Delta_0] Z_0' \\ &= D_{12}(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0, \Delta_0). \end{aligned} \quad (3.108)$$

Thus the cross term is the same, no matter how you calculate it, and we still have the identity

$$\begin{aligned} D(\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0) &= Z_0 D(\zeta_0, B_0) + Z_0 D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) \\ &\quad + D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0). \end{aligned} \quad (3.109)$$

Provided ζ_0, B_0 and $\{\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0\}$ are both perfect fluid spheres we again deduce

$$Z_0 D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) + D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0. \quad (3.110)$$

Now this gives us another way of looking at theorem 3 and theorem 4. For theorem 3 we first apply theorem 1 so we have the two equations

$$D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) = 0; \quad (3.111)$$

and

$$D_2(\zeta_0, B_0 + \Delta_0; Z_0) \equiv D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0. \quad (3.112)$$

Conversely, for theorem 4 where we first apply theorem 2 we see that we need to solve

$$D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0; \quad (3.113)$$

and

$$D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0) \equiv Z_0 D_1(\zeta_0; \Delta_0) + D_{12}(\zeta_0; Z_0, \Delta_0) = 0. \quad (3.114)$$

For theorem 5 we pick Z_0 arbitrarily, and solve the single ODE

$$D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0. \quad (3.115)$$

This is a single first-order linear inhomogeneous ODE for Δ_0 , and hence solvable. (In particular this makes it clear that theorem 5 is an *inhomogeneous* version of theorem 1 with a carefully arranged “source term” $D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0)$. While theorem 5 is not “idempotent” it does satisfy the important formal property that:

Lemma 3.

$$T_1 \circ T_5 \triangleq T_5 \quad (3.116)$$

which in particular tells us that the output from theorem 5 is never a seed metric.

Proof. Applying theorem 5 we need to solve

$$D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0 \quad (3.117)$$

in order to map

$$\{\zeta_0, B_0\} \rightarrow \{\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0\} \quad (3.118)$$

Now apply theorem 1 to $\{\zeta_0 Z_0, B_0 + \Delta_0\}$, this means we have to solve the homogeneous ODE

$$D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_1) = 0 \quad (3.119)$$

But then, using properties of first-order ODEs

$$\{D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0\} \oplus \{D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_1) = 0\} \quad (3.120)$$

$$\Rightarrow \{D_1(\zeta_0 Z_0; \Delta_0 + \Delta_1) + D_2(\zeta_0, B_0; Z_0) = 0\} \quad (3.121)$$

which is the ODE from theorem 5 back again. \square

(The net result of this observation, as we shall see in the next section, is that theorem 5 can be used to connect one seed metric with the “descendants” of another seed metric.)

3.4 Classifying perfect fluid spheres

We will now see the power of these transformation theorems (solution generating theorems) by using them in a number of different ways:

- To generate several new perfect fluid spheres
- To relate various perfect previously known fluid spheres to each other.
- And also to classify the geometries we encounter.

First some minor warnings: Despite comments made in [9], Kuch 2 I \equiv Tolman V; and Kuchb I b *is* a perfect fluid for general values of its parameters. Furthermore RR-I \equiv Einstein static; RR-V = Tolman V ($n = -5/4$). If we had not noted these degeneracies then our tables below would have been more extensive, but would have conveyed no extra information.

Starting with the metric for any known perfect fluid sphere and successively applying theorem 1 and theorem 2 numerous times will supply us with endless “new” perfect fluid sphere solutions. There are so many types of “new” solutions such as:

- Some of these “new” solutions might already be findable in the literature, some of them might be truly novel.
- Some of these solutions can be written down in a fully explicit form.

Some selected perfect fluid solutions

Name	Metric
Minkowski	$-dt^2 + dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Einstein static	$-dt^2 + (1 - r^2/R^2)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
de Sitter	$-(1 - r^2/R^2) dt^2 + (1 - r^2/R^2)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Schwarzschild Interior	$-\left(A - B\sqrt{1 - r^2/R^2}\right)^2 dt^2 + (1 - r^2/R^2)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Schwarzschild Exterior	$-(1 - 2m/r) dt^2 + (1 - 2m/r)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
S1	$-r^4 dt^2 + dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
K-O III	$-(A + Br^2)^2 dt^2 + dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Kuch1 Ib	$-(Ar + Br \ln r)^2 dt^2 + 2dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
B-L	$-A(r^2/a^2) dt^2 + 2(1 + r^2/a^2)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Tolman IV	$-B^2 (1 + r^2/a^2) dt^2 + \frac{1+2r^2/a^2}{(1-r^2/b^2)(1+r^2/a^2)} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Tolman IV ($b \rightarrow \infty$)	$-B^2 (1 + r^2/a^2) dt^2 + \frac{1+2r^2/a^2}{1+r^2/a^2} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Tolman V	$-B^2 r^{2(1+n)} dt^2 + (2 - n^2) [1 - Ar^{2(2-n^2)/(2+n)}]^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Tolman V ($A \rightarrow 0$)	$-B^2 r^{2(1+n)} dt^2 + (2 - n^2) dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Tolman VI	$-(Ar^{1-n} + Br^{1+n})^2 dt^2 + (2 - n^2) dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Tolman VII	$-B^2 \cos \left\{ \ln \left[\sqrt{1 - 2r^2/a^2 + r^4/b^4} + r^2/a^2 - b^2/a^2 \right]^{1/2} + \theta \right\}^2$ $+ (1 - 2r^2/a^2 + r^4/b^4)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Tolman VIII	$-A^2 r^{2(n-1)(n-4)/n} \left(\frac{-n^2}{(n^2-4n+2)(n^2-8n+8)} + Br^{-(n^2-8n+8)/n} + Cr^{-2(n^2-4n+2)/n} \right)$ $+ \left(\frac{-n^2}{(n^2-4n+2)(n^2-8n+8)} + Br^{-(n^2-8n+8)/n} + Cr^{-2(n^2-4n+2)/n} \right)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Kuch 68 II	$-(1 - 2m/r) dt^2 + [(1 - 2m/r) (1 + C(2r - 2m)^2)]^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Kuch 68 I	$-\left(A\sqrt{1 - 2m/r} + B \left[r^2/m^2 + 5r/m - 30 + 15\sqrt{1 - 2m/r} \ln\{1 - r/m - \sqrt{r(r - 2m)/m}\} \right]\right)^2 dt^2$ $+(1 - 2m/r)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
M-W III	$-Ar(r - a) + \frac{7/4}{1-r^2/a^2} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Kuch I b	$-r^2[A + B \operatorname{arctanh}(a/\sqrt{a^2 + r^2})]^2 dt^2 + 2(1 + r^2/a^2)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Heint IIa (C=0)	$-(1 + ar^2)^3 dt^2 + [(1 + ar^2)/(1 - ar^2/2)] dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Heint IIa	$-(1 + ar^2)^3 dt^2 + \left[1 - \frac{3ar^2}{2(1+ar^2)} + \frac{Cr^2}{(1+ar^2)\sqrt{1+4ar^2}} \right]^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$

Table 3.2: Some well-known perfect fluid spheres and their corresponding metrics. Note that we have often reparameterized these metrics to make them easier to deal with, and so their appearance (but not the substance) may differ from other sources [9, 11, 20]. Metric S1 is a special case of K-O III, Tolman V, and Tolman VI, notable for its extreme simplicity.

Some apparently new perfect fluid solutions

Name	Metric
Martin 1	$-(Ar + Br \ln r)^2 dt^2 + 2 \frac{2A+2B \ln r+B}{2A+2B \ln r+B-Cr^2} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Martin 2	$-Ar(r-a)dt^2 + \frac{7}{4} \left(1 - \frac{r^2}{a^2} - B \frac{(r-a)r^{7/3}}{(4r-3a)^{4/3}}\right)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
Martin 3	$-(1+ar^2)^2 dt^2 + [1 - br^2/(1+3ar^2)^{2/3}]^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P1	$-(1+ar^2)^2 \left[A + B \int \frac{(1+ar^2)^{-2}}{\sqrt{1-br^2/(1+3ar^2)^{2/3}}} r dr \right]^2 dt^2 + [1 - br^2/(1+3ar^2)^{2/3}]^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P2	$-(Ar + Br \ln r)^2 \left[\sigma + \epsilon \int (Ar + Br \ln r)^{-2} \left(2 \frac{2A+2B \ln r+B}{2A+2B \ln r+B-Cr^2} \right)^{-1/2} r dr \right]^2 dt^2$ $+ 2 \frac{2A+2B \ln r+B}{2A+2B \ln r+B-Cr^2} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P3	$-(1+ar^2)^3 \left[A + B \frac{(5+2ar^2)\sqrt{1-ar^2/2}}{(1+ar^2)^{3/2}} \right]^2 dt^2 + [(1+ar^2)/(1-ar^2/2)] dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P4	$-r^4 \left(A + B \int \frac{dr}{r^3 \sqrt{1+\lambda r^{2/3}}} \right)^2 dt^2 + (1+\lambda r^{2/3})^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P4	$-r^4 \left(A + B \left[\frac{15}{16} \lambda^3 \tanh^{-1}(1/\sqrt{1+\lambda r^{2/3}}) - \frac{1}{16} \sqrt{1+\lambda r^{2/3}} (8r^{-2} - 10\lambda r^{-4/3} + 15\lambda^2 r^{-2/3}) \right] \right)^2 dt^2$ $+(1+\lambda r^{2/3})^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P5	$-r \left(A\sqrt{r-a} + B\sqrt{r+a} \right)^2 + \frac{7/4}{1-r^2/a^2} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P6	$-r(r-a) \left(A + B \int \frac{dr}{(r-a)\sqrt{1-\frac{r^2}{a^2}-B\frac{(r-a)r^{7/3}}{(4r-3a)^{4/3}}}} \right)^2 + \frac{7}{4} \left(1 - \frac{r^2}{a^2} - B \frac{(r-a)r^{7/3}}{(4r-3a)^{4/3}} \right)^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P7	$-B^2 (1+r^2/a^2) \left[A + B \int \frac{\sqrt{a^2-2r^2}}{\sqrt{b^2-r^2}(a^2-r^2)^{3/2}} r dr \right]^2 dt^2 + \frac{1+2r^2/a^2}{(1-r^2/b^2)(1+r^2/a^2)} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$
P8	$-(1+ar^2)^3 \left[A + B \int \frac{r dr}{(1+ar^2)^2 \sqrt{1-\frac{3ar^2}{2(1+ar^2)} + \frac{Cr^2}{(1+ar^2)\sqrt{1+4ar^2}}}} \right]^2 dt^2 + \left[1 - \frac{3ar^2}{2(1+ar^2)} + \frac{Cr^2}{(1+ar^2)\sqrt{1+4ar^2}} \right]^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2$

Table 3.3: Some apparently new perfect fluid spheres and their corresponding metrics. Sometimes the relevant integrals cannot be done in elementary form. When they can be done they are explicitly shown.

- Some solutions are explicit but not elementary, in the sense that while the metric components can be exhibited as specific and explicit integrals, these integrals cannot be done in elementary form.
- Some solutions are so complex that present day symbolic manipulation programs quickly bog down.

(For specific symbolic computations we have used a vanilla installation of **Maple**. See appendix C for some sample worksheets).

Some seed geometries and their descendants

Seed	Theorem1	Theorem2	Theorem 3	Theorem 4
Minkowski	Einstein static	K-O III	interior Schwarzschild	Martin 3
exterior Schwarzschild	Kuch68 II	Kuch 86 I	[integral]	[integral]
de Sitter	Tolman IV	interior Schwarzschild	P7	[integral]
Tolman V ($A = 0$)	Tolman V	Tolman VI	Wyman III	Wyman IIa
S1	Tolman V ($n = +1$)	K-O III	P4	Martin 3
M-W III	Martin 2	P5	P6	[integral]
Heint IIa (C=0)	Heint IIa	P3	P8	[integral]

Table 3.4: Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 1–4. The notation “[integral]” denotes a metric so complicated that explicitly writing out the relevant integral is so tedious that it does not seem worthwhile.

Some non-seed perfect fluid geometries and their descendants

Base	Theorem1	Theorem2	Theorem 3	Theorem 4
Tolman IV	Tolman IV	P7	P7	[integral]
B-L	B-L	Kuchb I b	Kuchb I b	[integral]
Heint IIa	Heint IIa	P8	P8	[integral]
Tolman VI	Wyman IIa	Tolman VI	[integral]	Wyman IIa
Kuch1 Ib	Martin 1	Kuch1 Ib	P2	Martin 1
K-O III	Martin 3	K-O III	P1	Martin 3

Table 3.5: Non-seed solutions and their generalizations.

We present several tables and diagrams to summarize the situation. Two tables are used to provide the names and explicit metrics for the perfect fluid spheres we consider. Two other tables are used to describe the inter-relationships of these perfect

fluid spheres under T_1 , T_2 , T_3 , and T_4 . Recall that a seed metric is one for which theorem 1 and theorem 2 both yield metrics distinct from the seed: $T_1(g) \not\cong g \not\cong T_2(g)$. In contrast for non-seed metrics one or the other of these theorems is trivial, either $T_1(g) \cong g$ or $T_2(g) \cong g$.

In these tables, we can see the notation “[integral]” means that it is definitely a novel perfect fluid solution. However, the metric components involve an explicit integral that does not appear to be do-able by elementary methods, and is so complicated that it does not seem worthwhile to even write it down.

By considering that theorem 1 and theorem 2 have “idempotent” properties, and the fact that theorem 3 and theorem 4 can be expressed in terms of the first two theorems, it is possible to structure, and therefore to graphically visualize the relationship between all metrics generated from a given seed metric. We demonstrate this behaviour starting with Minkowski spacetime as seed metric where we are starting with this trivial seed to check if it is possible to create endless new perfect fluid spheres. The first few steps can be carried out explicitly, and show that Minkowski space generates several well known interesting perfect fluid models.

In figure 3.8 all the ideas from the previous sections are used. Each box represents a specific metric (perfect fluid sphere) while the arrows correspond to the application of the different theorems. The horizontal arrows correspond to an application of theorem 1 and the vertical arrows to an application of theorem 2. In addition, the vectors pointing along the diagonals can either indicate an application of theorem 3 or theorem 4. A dotted arrow corresponds to the application of theorem 3 while the dashed arrow represents an application of theorem 4.

Figure 3.2 shows that after applying theorem 1 to the Minkowski seed metric, we get the Einstein static universe. By the idempotence of theorem 1 n applications of T_1 to the seed metric still results in the Einstein static. Similarly, any number of applications of theorem 2 after the first (which leads to the K–O III solution) does not give us any further new solutions (see figure 3.4) so we can see from this figure that theorem 2 is “idempotent”. In addition, we can also see that the first and second generating theorems are not commutative. Application of theorem 1 and theorem 2 in that order to the Minkowski seed metric results in the Schwarzschild Interior geometry,

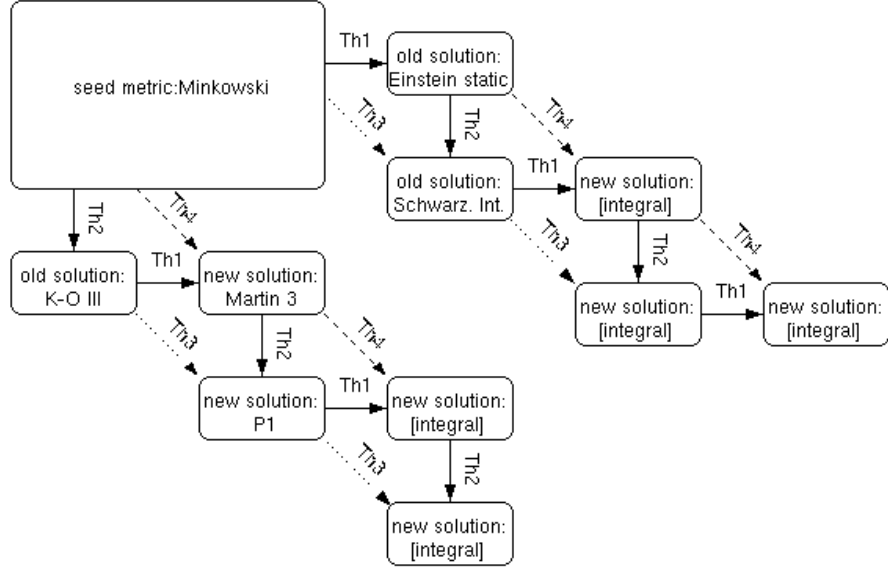


Figure 3.8: Structure graph for Minkowski space used as seed metric.

whereas application of theorem 1 after theorem 2 gives us the Martin 3 solution, which is quite distinct from the three-parameter Schwarzschild interior solution. Indeed, it seems as if it is possible to create endless new solutions for a perfect fluid sphere out of the Minkowski metric (or any other of the seed metrics). After several iterations the calculations become more complex, and can no longer be carried out analytically. We then resort to numerical computation to find out whether theorem 3 and theorem 4 have some sort of numerical limit, a numerical fixed point, or not. Depending on the choice for $(\lambda, \sigma, \epsilon)$ both theorems converge very quickly. Specifically, we used **Matlab** to numerically analyze the evolution of $\zeta(r)$ and $B(r)$ after applying theorem 3

several times to the Minkowski metric. Numerical results are summarized in figure 3.9. This figure indicates that theorem 3 and theorem 4 both appear to have well defined numerical limits, though we have no direct analytic solution for the fixed point metric.

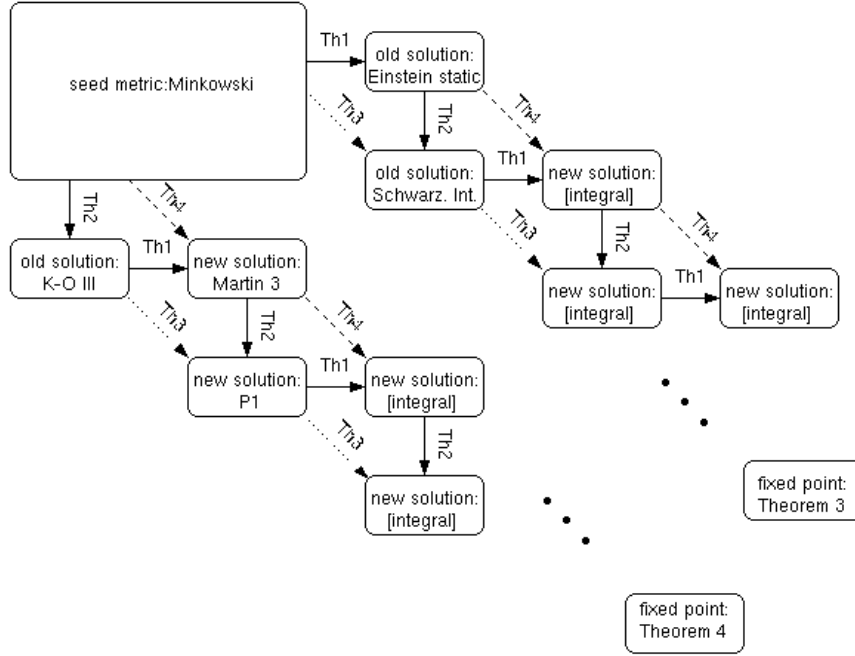


Figure 3.9: Numerical implementations of Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 can be used to investigate the behavior for n applications, if the number of applications goes to infinity. For specific choices of parameters λ_i , σ_i , and ϵ_i , multiple reapplications of Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 approach a limit, in the sense that both metric components are converging towards there fixed-points.

3.5 Discussion

We have developed several transformation theorems that map perfect fluid spheres to perfect fluid spheres using Schwarzschild coordinates. We used these transformations as a basis for classifying different types of perfect fluid sphere solutions. Applying these theorems on a known perfect fluid sphere, different solutions are often obtained. Some of the solutions are already known in the literature but most of them are novel. Moreover, we can classify which metrics can be produced by our theorems, and which ones cannot. The first theorem we presented is in a slightly different formalism, and demonstrates an independent way of proving it. Indeed, the second theorem we presented is a new transformation theorem. The idempotence property of Theorem 1 and Theorem 2 can divide the class of perfect fluid spheres into seed and non-seed metrics. Classifying seed and non-seed metrics are important because we have developed a tool to generate new solutions for a perfect fluid sphere, which does not require us to directly solve the Einstein equations. Indeed, the whole procedure was set up in such a way that we are implicitly and indirectly solving the Einstein equations, but the utility of the transformation theorems is that one does not have to go back to first principles for each new calculation.

We established two new theorems by composing first and second generating theorems. They are in general distinct, which can be traced back to the fact that Theorem 1 and Theorem 2 do not, in general, commute. Indeed, Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 are, in general, not idempotent. That means when we apply Theorem 3 or Theorem 4 more than once, further solutions will in general be obtained. In addition, we can see the power of these transformation theorems as we can generate several new perfect fluid spheres and also can classify the geometries we encountered.

Furthermore, we have also established several relationships among the generating theorems. Previously, all metrics seemed to have nothing more in common than presenting a perfect fluid sphere. We have developed the concept of a seed metric, which is one that cannot be generated by our theorems. Starting with a seed metric and applying our theorems, it is possible to structure, therefore to visualize, the relationship between all metrics generated from a given seed metric in a graph. Based on this example it is possible to create endless new solutions out of the Minkowski metric. We

also used a numeric program to investigate whether Theorem 3 and Theorem 4 have fixed point limits. Both seem to converge very quickly. The situation is summarized graphically in figures (3.1) to (3.9), and in tabular form in tables (3.1) to (3.5).

Chapter 4

Solution generating theorems — other coordinates

Consider other coordinate systems: This chapter generalizes the theorems which we derived for Schwarzschild coordinates to a number of other coordinate systems. This may allow us to develop extra relations between the known solutions.

In all cases we give the metric and the pressure isotropy condition $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$. Finch and Skea [11] estimate that about 55% of all work on fluid spheres is carried out in Schwarzschild coordinates, that isotropic coordinates account for 35% of research, and that the remaining 10% is spread over multiple special cases (see below).

4.1 General diagonal coordinates:

Consider the metric:

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B(r)} + R(r)^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (4.1)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. That is, $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$. The equation $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$ is always fulfilled due to spherical symmetry.

Calculate

$$G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = \frac{\zeta B(R')^2 + 2BR\zeta'R' - \zeta}{R^2\zeta} \quad (4.2)$$

and

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{2B\zeta'R' + 2\zeta R''B + \zeta B'R' + 2R\zeta''B + R\zeta'B'}{R\zeta} \quad (4.3)$$

We set $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$, which supplies us with an ODE. This ODE reduces the freedom to choose the three functions in equation (4.1) to two:

$$[R(R\zeta)']B' + [2RR''\zeta + 2R^2\zeta'' - 2RR'\zeta' - 2(R')^2\zeta]B + 2\zeta = 0. \quad (4.4)$$

This is first order-linear non-homogeneous in $B(r)$, and second-order linear homogeneous in $\zeta(r)$. Note in particular it is linear in both $\zeta(r)$ and $B(r)$ and the comment below equation (16.10) in “exact solutions” [20] (while true) completely misses the mark. There is nothing particularly nice about the $R(r)$ dependence.

4.2 Schwarzschild (curvature) coordinates:

This is the basis of the theorems which were previously derived above.

Consider the metric

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (4.5)$$

and the ODE

$$[r(r\zeta)']B' + [2r^2\zeta'' - 2(r\zeta)']B + 2\zeta = 0. \quad (4.6)$$

This is first order-linear non-homogeneous in $B(r)$, and second-order linear homogeneous in $\zeta(r)$. Solving for $B(r)$ in terms of $\zeta(r)$ is the basis of the [16], (and is the basis for Theorem 2 in chapter 3).

Sometimes people prefer to write $B(r)$ in terms of $m(r)$

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 - \frac{2m(r)}{r}} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (4.7)$$

or even $\mu(r) = m/r^3$, but there is no qualitative gain in doing so.

If we re-group things in terms of ζ we find

$$2r^2\zeta'' + (r^2B' - 2rB)\zeta' + (rB' - 2B + 2)\zeta = 0, \quad (4.8)$$

which is a linear homogeneous 2nd order ODE. This is the basis of Theorems 1 and 3 in the above section.

4.3 Isotropic coordinates:

Consider the metric

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{1}{\zeta(r)^2 B(r)^2} \{dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2\} \quad (4.9)$$

Calculate

$$G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = (\zeta')^2 B^2 - (B')^2 \zeta^2 + 2B' B \zeta^2 / r \quad (4.10)$$

and

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = -(B')^2 \zeta^2 + \zeta^2 B B'' - (\zeta')^2 B^2 + B' B \zeta^2 / r \quad (4.11)$$

We set $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$, which supplies us with an ODE. This ODE reduces the freedom to choose the two functions in equation (4.9) to one:

$$\left(\frac{\zeta'}{\zeta}\right)^2 = \frac{B'' - B'/r}{2B}. \quad (4.12)$$

There are several ways of improving this. If we write $\zeta(r) = \exp(\int g(r)dr)$ then we have an algebraic equation for $g(r)$:

$$g(r) = \pm \sqrt{\frac{B'' - B'/r}{2B}}. \quad (4.13)$$

Conversely, the isotropy condition can be written in terms of $B(r)$ as:

$$B'' - B'/r - 2g^2 B = 0. \quad (4.14)$$

This is about as simple as you can make things.

There is an improvement in writing $B(r) = \exp(2 \int h(r)dr)$ so that

$$g(r)^2 = 2h(r)^2 + h'(r) - h(r)/r \quad (4.15)$$

which is the basis of [18].

4.3.1 The seventh and eighth theorems

Theorem 7. *In Isotropic coordinates, if $\{\zeta(r), B(r)\}$ describe a perfect fluid then so does $\{\zeta(r)^{-1}, B(r)\}$. This is the Buchdahl transformation in disguise.*

That is, the geometry defined by holding $B_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\frac{1}{\zeta_0(r)^2} dt^2 + \frac{\zeta_0(r)^2}{B_0(r)^2} \{dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2\} \quad (4.16)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. Alternatively, the mapping

$$T_7 : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0^{-1}, B_0\} \quad (4.17)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.

Proof for Theorem 7: Assuming that $\{\zeta_0(r)^{-1}, B_0(r)\}$ solves equation (4.12).

We consider *L.H.S.* of the equation (4.12),

$$\zeta_0 \rightarrow \zeta_1 : \left(\frac{\zeta'_0}{\zeta_0} \right)^2 \rightarrow \left(\frac{(\zeta_0^{-1})'}{\zeta_0^{-1}} \right)^2 = \left(\frac{(-\zeta'_0 \zeta_0^{-2})}{\zeta_0^{-1}} \right)^2 = \left(\frac{-\zeta'_0}{\zeta_0} \right)^2 = \left(\frac{\zeta'_0}{\zeta_0} \right)^2 \quad (4.18)$$

This shows that $\{\zeta(r), B(r)\}$ describe a perfect fluid then so does $\{\zeta(r)^{-1}, B(r)\}$.

The transformation T_7 defined in Theorem 7 is a “square root of unity” in the sense that:

$$T_7 \circ T_7 = I, \quad (4.19)$$

To see this, consider the sequence

$$\{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_1, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_2, B_0\} \dots \quad (4.20)$$

In this section we consider a two-step composition to check that T_7 is a square root of unity. In particular, to be more explicit about this note that at step one

$$\zeta_1 = \zeta_0^{-1} \quad (4.21)$$

while at the second step

$$\zeta_2 = \zeta_1^{-1} = (\zeta_0^{-1})^{-1} = \zeta_0 \quad (4.22)$$

For reasons of convenience and without loss of generality, we can write for $\zeta(r)$, after applying theorem 1 n -times, as : $\zeta(r) = \zeta(r)^{-1}$, for $n = \text{odd number}$ and $\zeta(r) = \zeta(r)$, for $n = \text{even number}$. \square

Theorem 8. *Let $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ describe a perfect fluid sphere. Define*

$$Z_0 = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{B_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.23)$$

Then for all σ and ϵ , the geometry defined by holding $\zeta_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{1}{\zeta_0(r)^2 B_0(r)^2 Z_0(r)^2} \{dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2\} \quad (4.24)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_8(\sigma, \epsilon) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_0 Z_0(B_0)\} \quad (4.25)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.

Proof for Theorem 8. The proof of theorem 8 is based on the technique of “reduction in order”. Assuming that $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ solves equation (4.14), write

$$B_1(r) = B_0(r) Z_0(r). \quad (4.26)$$

and demand that $\{\zeta_0(r), B_1(r)\}$ also solves equation (4.14). We find

$$(B_0 Z_0)'' - (B_0 Z_0)' / r - 2g^2(B_0 Z_0) = 0. \quad (4.27)$$

we can expand the above equation to

$$(B_0'' Z_0 + 2B_0' Z_0' + B_0 Z_0'') - (B_0' Z_0) / r - (B_0 Z_0') / r - 2g^2(B_0 Z_0) = 0. \quad (4.28)$$

we can also re-group this same equation as

$$\{B_0'' - B_0' / r - 2g^2 B_0\} Z_0 + 2B_0' Z_0' + B_0 Z_0'' - (B_0 Z_0') / r = 0. \quad (4.29)$$

A linear homogeneous 2nd order ODE for B now simplifies to

$$(2B_0' - B_0 / r) Z_0' + B_0 Z_0'' = 0, \quad (4.30)$$

which is an ordinary homogeneous second-order differential equation, depending only on Z_0' and Z_0'' . (So it can be viewed as a first-order homogeneous order differential equation in Z_0' , which is solvable.) Separating the unknown variable to one side,

$$\frac{Z_0''}{Z_0'} = -2 \frac{B_0'}{B_0} + \frac{1}{r}. \quad (4.31)$$

Re-write $Z_0''/Z_0' = d \ln(Z_0')/dr$, and integrate twice over both sides of equation (4.31), to obtain

$$Z_0(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{B_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.32)$$

depending on the old solution $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$, and two arbitrary integration constants σ and ϵ . \square

“Idempotence” Proof for Theorem 8. To see that the transformation T_8 defined in Theorem 8 is “idempotent” we first show

$$T_8 \circ T_8 \triangleq T_8, \quad (4.33)$$

and then iterate. The precise two-step composition rule is

$$T_8(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ T_8(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = T_8 \left(\sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_1 \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right). \quad (4.34)$$

In this section we consider a two-step composition rule to find idempotence. In particular, the most outstanding features of these steps are:

- To see “idempotence”, note that for fixed $\zeta_0(r)$ equation (4.14) has a solution space that is exactly two dimensional.
- Since the first application of T_8 takes any specific solution and maps it into the full two-dimensional solution space, any subsequent application of T_8 can do no more than move one around inside this two dimensional solution space — physically this corresponds to a relabelling of parameters describing the perfect fluid metric you are dealing with, not the generation of new solutions.

To be more explicit about this note that at step one

$$B_0 \rightarrow B_1 = B_0 \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{r \, dr}{B_0(r)^2} \right\}, \quad (4.35)$$

while at the second step

$$B_1 \rightarrow B_2 = B_1 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{r \, dr}{B_1(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.36)$$

That is:

$$B_2 = B_0 \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{r \, dr}{B_0(r)^2} \right\} \times \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{r \, dr}{B_0(r)^2 [\sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int r \, dr / B_0(r)^2]^2} \right\}. \quad (4.37)$$

But this can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned} B_2 &= B_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int \frac{dZ_0}{Z_0^2} \right\} \\ &= B_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int d \left(\frac{1}{Z_0} \right) \right\} \\ &= B_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \left[\frac{1}{Z_0} - \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (4.38)$$

Therefore

$$B_2 = B_0 \left\{ -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0 \right\}. \quad (4.39)$$

That is

$$B_1 = -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0, \quad (4.40)$$

from which the composition law follows:

$$\mathsf{T}_8(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ \mathsf{T}_8(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = \mathsf{T}_8 \left(\sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_1 \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right) \quad (4.41)$$

□

Note that this is almost identical to the computation performed in the Schwarzschild coordinates because idempotence of the theorem is a result of “reduction of order” not something special to general relativity.

4.3.2 Two linking generating theorems:

Having now found the first and second generating theorems, is now useful to find the connection between them. We start by taking a perfect fluid sphere solution $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ and applying theorem 7 onto it which gives us a new perfect fluid sphere $\{\zeta_1, B_0\}$. The new $\zeta_1 = \zeta_0^{-1}$. We now continue with applying theorem 8, again we get a new solution $\{\zeta_0^{-1}, B_1\}$, where B_1 now depends on the B_0 . All together we can consider this as a single process by introducing the following corollary:

Corollary 3. *If $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ denotes a perfect fluid sphere, then for all σ and ϵ , the two-parameters geometry defined by*

$$ds^2 = -\frac{1}{\zeta_0(r)^2} dt^2 + \frac{\zeta_0(r)^2}{B_0(r)^2 Z_0(r)^2} \{dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2\} \quad (4.42)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, where Z_0 is

$$Z_0(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{B_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.43)$$

That is

$$T_8 \circ T_7 : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0^{-1}, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0^{-1}, B_0 Z_0(B_0)\} \quad (4.44)$$

Instead of starting with theorem 7 we could first apply theorem 8 on $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$. This gives us a new perfect fluid sphere $\{\zeta_0, B_1\}$, where $B_1 = B_0 Z_0(B_0)$ is given by equation (4.32). We now continue with theorem 7 which leads to $\{\zeta_1, B_1\}$, where $\zeta_1 = \zeta_0^{-1}$. Again, we can consider this as a single process by introducing the following corollary:

Corollary 4. *If $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ denotes a perfect fluid sphere, then for all σ and ϵ , the two-parameters geometry defined by*

$$ds^2 = -\frac{1}{\zeta_0(r)^2} dt^2 + \frac{\zeta_0(r)^2}{B_0(r)^2 Z_0(r)^2} \{dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2\} \quad (4.45)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, where Z_0 is

$$Z_0(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{B_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.46)$$

That is

$$T_7 \circ T_8 : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_0 Z_0(B_0)\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0^{-1}, B_0 Z_0(B_0)\} \quad (4.47)$$

There are general comments about the relationship between both transformation theorems.

- These two transformation operations are *independent* of each other.
- The transformation T_7 defined in Theorem 7 is a “square root of unity”.
- Theorem 8 is in general idempotent. That means when we apply theorem 8 more than once no further solution will be obtained.
- Theorem 7 and theorem 8 are in general commute.

In addition, these comments can be described in terms of the equations below.

$$T_7 \not\equiv T_8; \quad T_7 \circ T_7 \triangleq I; \quad T_8 \circ T_8 \triangleq T_8; \quad T_7 \circ T_8 \triangleq T_8 \circ T_7. \quad (4.48)$$

4.4 Gaussian polar coordinates:

Consider the metric

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + dr^2 + R(r)^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (4.49)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. That is, $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$. Now $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$ is always fulfilled due to spherical symmetry.

We calculate

$$G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = -\frac{2\zeta'RR' - \zeta + \zeta(R')^2}{R^2\zeta} \quad (4.50)$$

and

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = -\frac{\zeta'R' + R''\zeta + \zeta''R}{R\zeta} \quad (4.51)$$

We set $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$, which supplies us with an 2nd order ODE for $\zeta(r)$, which reduces the freedom to choose the two functions to one:

$$\zeta''R^2 - \zeta'RR' + \zeta[1 - (R')^2 + R''R] = 0 \quad (4.52)$$

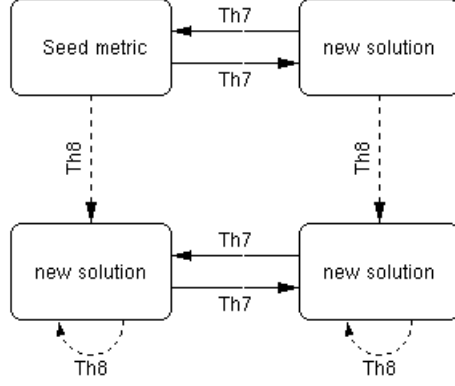


Figure 4.1: This structure shows that Theorem 7 and Theorem 8 are in general distinct. When we apply Theorem 7 to seed metric, we get a new solution, while applying Theorem 8 to seed metric, we get the other new solution. Furthermore, the diagram shows that Theorem 7 and Theorem 8 in general commute.

We can rewrite this equation as

$$\zeta'' - \zeta' \frac{R'}{R} + \zeta \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + R''R}{R^2} \right\} = 0 \quad (4.53)$$

4.4.1 The ninth theorem

Theorem 9. Suppose $\{\zeta_0(r), R_0(r)\}$ represents a perfect fluid sphere. Define

$$\Lambda_0(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{R_0(r) dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.54)$$

Then for all σ and ϵ , the geometry defined by holding $R_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 \Lambda_0(r)^2 dt^2 + dr^2 + R_0(r)^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (4.55)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_g(\sigma, \epsilon) : \{\zeta_0, R_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0 \Lambda_0(\zeta_0, R_0), R_0\} \quad (4.56)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.

Proof for Theorem 9. The proof of theorem 9 is again based on the technique of “reduction in order”. Assuming that $\{\zeta_0(r), R_0(r)\}$ solves again equation (4.52), write

$$\zeta_1(r) = \zeta_0(r) \Lambda_0(r). \quad (4.57)$$

and demand that $\{\zeta_1(r), R_0(r)\}$ also solves equation (4.52). We find

$$(\zeta_0 \Lambda_0)'' - (\zeta_0 \Lambda_0)' \frac{R'}{R} + (\zeta_0 \Lambda_0) \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + R''R}{R^2} \right\} = 0 \quad (4.58)$$

we can expand the above equation to

$$(\zeta_0'' \Lambda_0 + 2\zeta_0' \Lambda_0' + \zeta_0 \Lambda_0'') - (\zeta_0' \Lambda_0 + \zeta_0 \Lambda_0') \frac{R'}{R} + (\zeta_0 \Lambda_0) \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + R''R}{R^2} \right\} = 0 \quad (4.59)$$

we can also re-group this same equation as

$$\left\{ \zeta_0'' - \zeta_0' \frac{R'}{R} + \zeta_0 \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + R''R}{R^2} \right\} \right\} \Lambda_0 + 2\zeta_0' \Lambda_0' + \zeta_0 \Lambda_0'' - \zeta_0 \Lambda_0' \frac{R'}{R} = 0. \quad (4.60)$$

A linear homogeneous 2nd order ODE for ζ now simplifies to

$$(2\zeta_0' - \zeta_0 \frac{R'}{R}) \Lambda_0' + \zeta_0 \Lambda_0'' = 0, \quad (4.61)$$

which is an ordinary homogeneous second-order differential equation, depending only on Λ_0' and Λ_0'' . (So it can be viewed as a first-order homogeneous order differential equation in Λ_0' , which is solvable.) Separating the unknown variable to one side,

$$\frac{\Lambda_0''}{\Lambda_0'} = -2 \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} + \frac{R_0'}{R_0}. \quad (4.62)$$

Re-write $\Lambda_0''/\Lambda_0' = d \ln(\Lambda_0')/dr$, and integrate twice over both sides of equation (4.62), to obtain

$$\Lambda_0(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{R_0(r) dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.63)$$

depending on the old solution $\{\zeta_0(r), R_0(r)\}$, and two arbitrary integration constants σ and ϵ . \square

“Idempotence” Proof for Theorem 9. To see that the transformation T_9 defined in Theorem 3 is “idempotent” we first show

$$T_9 \circ T_9 \triangleq T_9, \quad (4.64)$$

and then iterate. The precise two-step composition rule is

$$T_9(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ T_9(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = T_9\left(\sigma_2\sigma_1, \epsilon_1\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1}\right). \quad (4.65)$$

In this section we consider a two-step composition rule to find idempotence. In particular, the most outstanding features of these steps are:

- To see “idempotence”, note that for fixed $R_0(r)$ equation (4.53) has a solution space that is exactly two dimensional.
- Since the first application of T_9 takes any specific solution and maps it into the full two-dimensional solution space, any subsequent application of T_9 can do no more than move one around inside this two dimensional solution space — physically this corresponds to a relabelling of parameters describing the perfect fluid metric you are dealing with, not the generation of new solutions.

To be more explicit about this note that at step one

$$\zeta_0 \rightarrow \zeta_1 = \zeta_0 \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{R_0(r) dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2} \right\}, \quad (4.66)$$

while at the second step

$$\zeta_1 \rightarrow \zeta_2 = \zeta_1 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{R_0 dr}{\zeta_1(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.67)$$

That is:

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_2 &= \zeta_0 \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{R_0(r) \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2} \right\} \\ &\quad \times \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{R_0(r) \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \left[\sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int R_0(r) \, dr / \zeta_0(r)^2 \right]^2} \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (4.68)$$

But this can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_2 &= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int \frac{dZ_0}{Z_0^2} \right\} \\ &= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int d \left(\frac{1}{Z_0} \right) \right\} \\ &= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \left[\frac{1}{Z_0} - \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (4.69)$$

Therefore

$$\zeta_2 = \zeta_0 \left\{ -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0 \right\}. \quad (4.70)$$

That is

$$\zeta_1 = -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0, \quad (4.71)$$

from which the composition law follows:

$$\mathsf{T}_g(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ \mathsf{T}_g(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = \mathsf{T}_g \left(\sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_1 \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right) \quad (4.72)$$

□

Again, note similarities to what happens in Schwarzschild coordinates.

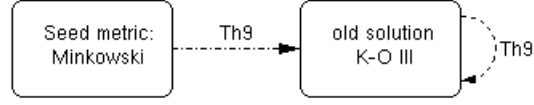


Figure 4.2: This structure shows that Theorem 9 is idempotent. When we apply Theorem 9 to Minkowski as a seed metric, we get the K-O III as a new solution.

4.5 Buchdahl coordinates:

Consider the metric

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^{-1} dt^2 + \zeta(r) dr^2 + \zeta(r) R(r)^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (4.73)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. That is, $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$. Note $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$ is always fulfilled due to spherical symmetry. We calculate

$$G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = \frac{1}{4} \left(\frac{-4 \zeta^2 (R')^2 + 4 \zeta^2 + (\zeta')^2 R^2}{\zeta^3 R^2} \right) \quad (4.74)$$

and

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = -\frac{1}{4} \left(\frac{4 \zeta^2 R'' + (\zeta')^2 R}{\zeta^3 R} \right) \quad (4.75)$$

We set $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$, which supplies us with an 2nd order ODE for $\zeta(r)$, which reduces the freedom to choose the two functions to one:

$$\left(\frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} \right)^2 = -\frac{2[1 - (R')^2 + RR'']}{R^2}. \quad (4.76)$$

This coordinate system is a sort of cross between isothermal and proper radius.

Theorem 10. *If $\{\zeta(r), R(r)\}$ describes a perfect fluid then so does $\{\zeta(r)^{-1}, R(r)\}$. This is the Buchdahl transformation in yet another disguise.*

The geometry defined by holding $R_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r) dt^2 + \frac{1}{\zeta_0(r)} dr^2 + \frac{R_0(r)^2}{\zeta_0(r)} d\Omega^2 \quad (4.77)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_{10} : \{\zeta_0, R_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0^{-1}, R_0\} \quad (4.78)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.

4.6 Sygne isothermal coordinates:

Consider

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^{-2} \{dt^2 - dr^2\} + \{\zeta(r)^{-2} R(r)^2 d\Omega^2\} \quad (4.79)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. That is, $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$. While $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$ is always fulfilled due to spherical symmetry. We calculate

$$G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = -\frac{3R^2 (\zeta')^2 - 4R\zeta R' \zeta' + (R')^2 \zeta^2 - \zeta^2}{R^2} \quad (4.80)$$

and

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = -\frac{3R(\zeta')^2 - 2\zeta R' \zeta' - 2R \zeta \zeta'' + \zeta^2 R''}{R} \quad (4.81)$$

We set $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$, which supplies us with an 2nd order ODE for $\zeta(r)$, which reduces the freedom to choose the two functions in equation

$$\zeta'' - \zeta' \frac{R'}{R} - \zeta \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + RR''}{2R^2} \right\} = 0. \quad (4.82)$$

This is very similar equation to Gaussian polar.

Theorem 11. Suppose $\{\zeta_0(r), R_0(r)\}$ represents a perfect fluid sphere. Define

$$A_0(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{R_0(r) dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.83)$$

Then for all σ and ϵ , the geometry defined by holding $R_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\frac{1}{\zeta_0(r)^2 A_0(r)^2} \{dt^2 - dr^2\} + \frac{R_0(r)^2}{\zeta_0(r)^2 A_0(r)^2} d\Omega^2 \quad (4.84)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_{11}(\sigma, \epsilon) : \{\zeta_0, R_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0 A_0(\zeta_0, R_0), R_0\} \quad (4.85)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.

Proof for Theorem 11. The proof of theorem 11 is based on the technique of “reduction in order”. Assuming that $\{\zeta_0(r), R_0(r)\}$ solves equation (4.82), write

$$\zeta_1(r) = \zeta_0(r) A_0(r). \quad (4.86)$$

and demand that $\{\zeta_1(r), R_0(r)\}$ also solves equation (4.82). We find

$$(\zeta_0 A_0)'' - (\zeta_0 A_0)' \frac{R'}{R} + (\zeta_0 A_0) \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + RR''}{2R^2} \right\} = 0 \quad (4.87)$$

we can expand the above equation to

$$(\zeta_0'' A_0 + 2\zeta_0' A_0' + \zeta_0 A_0'') - (\zeta_0' A_0 + \zeta_0 A_0') \frac{R'}{R} + (\zeta_0 A_0) \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + RR''}{2R^2} \right\} = 0 \quad (4.88)$$

we can also re-group this same equation as

$$\left\{ \zeta_0'' - \zeta_0' \frac{R'}{R} + \zeta_0 \left\{ \frac{1 - (R')^2 + RR''}{2R^2} \right\} \right\} A_0 + 2\zeta_0' A_0' + \zeta_0 A_0'' - \zeta_0 A_0' \frac{R'}{R} = 0. \quad (4.89)$$

A linear homogeneous 2nd order ODE for ζ now simplifies to

$$(2\zeta_0' - \zeta_0 \frac{R'}{R}) A_0' + \zeta_0 A_0'' = 0, \quad (4.90)$$

which is an ordinary homogeneous second-order differential equation, depending only on A_0' and A_0'' . (So it can be viewed as a first-order homogeneous order differential equation in A_0' , which is solvable.) Separating the unknown variable to one side,

$$\frac{A_0''}{A_0'} = -2 \frac{\zeta_0'}{\zeta_0} + \frac{R'}{R_0}. \quad (4.91)$$

Re-write $A_0''/A_0' = d \ln(A_0')/dr$, and integrate twice over both sides of equation (4.91), to obtain

$$A_0(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{R_0(r) dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2} \right\}. \quad (4.92)$$

depending on the old solution $\{\zeta_0(r), R_0(r)\}$, and two arbitrary integration constants σ and ϵ . \square

4.7 Exponential coordinates:

You can always choose to effectively use g_{tt} itself as one of the coordinates, by picking the functional form of g_{tt} to be any arbitrarily specified function $f(z)$. For instance, choose

$$g_{tt} = -\exp(-2z) \quad (4.93)$$

then a useful choice is

$$ds^2 = -\exp(-2z) dt^2 + \exp(+2z) \left\{ \frac{dz^2}{B(z)} + R(z)^2 d\Omega^2 \right\} \quad (4.94)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. That is, $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{z}\hat{z}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$. Note $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$ is always fulfilled due to spherical symmetry. Calculate

$$G_{\hat{z}\hat{z}} = \frac{(BR^2 - (R')^2 B + 1) \exp(-2z)}{R^2} \quad (4.95)$$

and

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{(B'R' + 2R''B + 2BR) \exp(-2z)}{R} \quad (4.96)$$

We set $G_{\hat{z}\hat{z}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$, which supplies us with an 1st order ODE for B , which reduces the freedom to choose the two functions in the metric to one for which the isotropy constraint becomes

$$B'[RR'] + B[4R^2 - 2(R')^2 + 2RR''] + 2 = 0 \quad (4.97)$$

Theorem 12. Suppose $\{B_0(z), R_0(z)\}$ represents a perfect fluid sphere. Define

$$\Upsilon_0(z) = \frac{R_0(z)^2}{(R'_0(z))^2} \exp \left\{ -4 \int \frac{R_0(z)}{R'_0(z)} dz \right\}. \quad (4.98)$$

Then for all λ , the geometry defined by holding $R_0(z)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\exp(-2z) dt^2 + \exp(+2z) \left\{ \frac{dz^2}{B_0(z) + \lambda \Upsilon_0(z)} + R_0(z)^2 d\Omega^2 \right\} \quad (4.99)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_{12}(\sigma, \epsilon) : \{B_0, R_0\} \mapsto \{B_0 \Upsilon_0(R_0), R_0\} \quad (4.100)$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres.

Proof for Theorem 12. Assume that $\{B_0(z), R_0(z)\}$ is a solution for equation (4.97).

We want to find under what conditions does $\{B_1(z), R_0(z)\}$ also satisfy equation (4.97)? Without loss of generality, we write

$$B_1(z) = B_0(z) + \lambda \Upsilon_0(z). \quad (4.101)$$

Equation (4.97) can now be used to determine $\Upsilon_0(z)$. Substitute $B_1(z)$ in Equation (4.97)

$$(B_0 + \lambda \Upsilon_0)'[R_0 R_0'] + (B_0 + \lambda \Upsilon_0)[4R_0^2 - 2(R_0')^2 + 2R_0 R_0''] + 2 = 0 \quad (4.102)$$

we can also re-group this same equation as

$$\begin{aligned} & [R_0 R_0'] B_0' + [4R_0^2 - 2(R_0')^2 + 2R_0 R_0''] B_0 + 2 \\ & + [R_0 R_0'] \Upsilon_0' + [4R_0^2 - 2(R_0')^2 + 2R_0 R_0''] \Upsilon_0 = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (4.103)$$

That ordinary *inhomogeneous* first-order differential equation in B now simplifies to

$$[R_0 R_0'] \Upsilon_0' + [4R_0^2 - 2(R_0')^2 + 2R_0 R_0''] \Upsilon_0 = 0, \quad (4.104)$$

which is an ordinary *homogeneous* first-order differential equation in Υ_0 .

Now we can calculate Υ_0 by following,

$$[R_0 R_0'] \Upsilon_0' = - [4R_0^2 - 2(R_0')^2 + 2R_0 R_0''] \Upsilon_0. \quad (4.105)$$

Rearrange it into

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\Upsilon_0'}{\Upsilon_0} &= \frac{- [4R_0^2 - 2(R_0')^2 + 2R_0 R_0'']}{[R_0 R_0']} \\ &= -4 \frac{R_0}{R_0'} + 2 \frac{R_0'}{R_0} - 2 \frac{R_0''}{R_0'} \end{aligned} \quad (4.106)$$

A straightforward calculation, including an integration by parts, leads to

$$\Upsilon_0(z) = \frac{R_0^2}{(R_0')^2} \exp \left\{ -4 \int \frac{R_0}{R_0'} dz \right\}. \quad (4.107)$$

□

4.8 Discussion

We have developed several transformation theorems that map perfect fluid spheres to perfect fluid sphere using other coordinates. We derived the seventh and eighth theorems using Isotropic coordinates. The transformation in Theorem 7 is a “square root of unity”. Indeed, Theorem 8 is almost identical to the calculation performed in the Schwarzschild coordinates. In addition, the idempotence of this theorem is a result of “reduction of order”, which is not special to general relativity. We are able to classify the connection between both transformation theorems. The two transformation operations are independent of each other. Furthermore, both theorems in general commute. Figure 4.1 shows that after applying Theorem 7 to the seed metric, we get a new solution while applying Theorem 8 to seed metric, we get the other new solution. By the idempotence of Theorem 8 n applications of T_8 to the seed metric still results in the same non-seed metric. Furthermore, the diagram shows that Theorem 7 and Theorem 8 in general commute.

In Gaussian polar coordinates, we established another transformation theorem, which has many similarities to the results in Schwarzschild coordinates. Figure 4.2 shows that Theorem 9 is idempotent. When we apply Theorem 9 to Minkowski as a seed metric, we get the K-O III as a new solution.

Furthermore, we have also established the transformation theorem using Buchdahl coordinates. Theorem 10 is the Buchdahl transformation in yet another disguise.

In Synge isothermal coordinates, we presented Theorem 11 is a transformation theorem. However, this transformation is almost identical to the computation performed in the Schwarzschild coordinates.

The last solution generating theorem we presented using exponential coordinates. Indeed, this Theorem 12 also map perfect fluid spheres to perfect fluid spheres.

Chapter 5

TOV equation - related theorems

5.1 Introduction

The Tolman-Oppenheimer-Volkoff (TOV) equations describe the hydrostatic equilibrium of perfect fluid stars without rotation in general relativity. We can solve the *TOV* equations by constructing the equation of state for the entire region of nonzero density starting from the higher density at center to the surface density. In this chapter, we can rephrase Theorems 1, 2, 3 and 4 directly in terms of the TOV equation. In addition, we also can rephrase all these theorems, which apply in Schwarzschild coordinates directly in terms of the pressure profile and density profile.

5.2 TOV equation

5.2.1 Interior equation

In general relativity [24], continuous matter distributions and fields again are described by a stress-energy tensor T_{ab} . The stress tensor of a perfect fluid is given by

$$T^{ab} = \rho u^a u^b + p (g^{ab} + u^a u^b) \quad (5.1)$$

where $\rho(r)$ is density of mass-energy distribution in rest-frame of fluid, u is 4-velocity of fluid, and p is isotropic pressure in rest-frame of fluids.

We know that

$$G_{ab} = 8\pi G_N T_{ab} \quad (5.2)$$

We set $G_N = 1$ for convenience, and note that:

$$\nabla_a G^{ab} = 0 \quad (5.3)$$

We know that as contracted Bianchi identity.

The equation of motion for the matter is

$$\nabla_b T^{ab} = 0 \quad (5.4)$$

We define

$$u^a = \frac{dx^a}{d\tau} \quad (5.5)$$

This is the 4-velocity of a fluid element. We also define

$$A^a = \frac{d^2 x^a}{d\tau^2} = \frac{du^a}{d\tau} \quad (5.6)$$

This is the 4-acceleration.

In the rest frame of the fluid element $u^a = (c, \vec{0})$ and, $A^a = (0, \vec{a})$.

It follows that $u_a A^a = 0$.

It is an invariant quantity. In other words, the 4-acceleration of a particle is always orthogonal to its 4-velocity. Writing

$$\frac{d}{ds} = (u \nabla) \quad (5.7)$$

We see

$$0 = \frac{d}{ds}(-1) = \frac{d}{ds}(g_{ab} u^a u^b) = 2 u_a \frac{d}{ds} u^a = 2 u_a (u \nabla) u^a = 2 u_a A^a = 0 \quad (5.8)$$

Now consider $\nabla_b T^{ab}$; we can write this as

$$\begin{aligned} \nabla_b T^{ab} &= \nabla_b [\rho u^a u^b + p(g^{ab} + u^a u^b)] \\ &= (\nabla_b \rho) u^a u^b + (\nabla_b p)(g^{ab} + u^a u^b) \\ &\quad + (\rho + p)(\nabla_b u^a) u^b + (\rho + p) u^a (\nabla_b u^b) \\ &= [(\nabla_b \rho) u^b + (\rho + p)(\nabla \cdot u)] u^a \\ &\quad + [(\rho + p) A^a + \nabla_b p (g^{ab} + u^a u^b)] \\ &= 0 \end{aligned} \quad (5.9)$$

Writing out equation (5.4) in terms of ρ , p , and u^b , and projecting the resulting equation parallel and perpendicular to u_a , we can spilt up the equation into two equations:

$$[(\nabla_b \rho) u^b + (\rho + p)(\nabla \cdot u)] u^a = 0, \quad (5.10)$$

$$[(\rho + p)A^a + \nabla_b p(g^{ab} + u^a u^b)] = 0. \quad (5.11)$$

with $u^a u_a = -1$, and $A^a u_a = 0$, because they are orthogonal to each other.

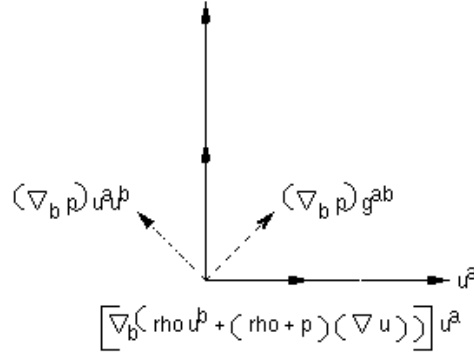


Figure 5.1: The diagram shows that when we write out equation (5.4) in terms of ρ, p , and u^b , and projecting the resulting equation parallel and perpendicular to u_a , we can spilt up the equation in to two equations.

Now use $(\nabla_b p) g^{ab} u_a = (\nabla_b p) u^b$, and $(\nabla_b p) u^a u^b u_a = -(\nabla_b p) u^b$. This means $(\nabla_b p) g^{ab} u_a$ and $(\nabla_b p) u^a u^b u_a$ have the same magnitude but opposite direction. We conclude

$$\nabla \cdot (\rho u) + p \nabla \cdot u = 0 \quad (5.12)$$

and

$$A^a = -\frac{(g^{ab} + u^a u^b) \nabla_b p}{\rho + p}. \quad (5.13)$$

5.3 A perfect fluid sphere in Schwarzschild coordinates

In the Schwarzschild coordinates [24], the metric of an arbitrary static, spherically symmetric spacetime can be put into the simple form

$$ds^2 = -f(r) dt^2 + h(r) dr^2 + r^2(d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2) \quad (5.14)$$

when $G_N = 1$, then $G_{ab} = 8\pi T_{ab}$.

The Einstein equations yield,

$$\begin{aligned} 8\pi\rho &= G_{00} = R_{00} + \frac{1}{2} (R_0^0 + R_1^1 + R_2^2 + R_3^3) \\ &= (rh^2)^{-1} h' + r^{-2}(1 - h^{-1}), \end{aligned} \quad (5.15)$$

$$\begin{aligned} 8\pi p &= G_{11} = R_{11} - \frac{1}{2} (R_0^0 + R_1^1 + R_2^2 + R_3^3) \\ &= (rfh)^{-1} f' - r^{-2}(1 - h^{-1}), \end{aligned} \quad (5.16)$$

$$\begin{aligned} 8\pi p &= G_{22} = \frac{1}{2}(fh)^{-1/2} \frac{d}{dr} [(fh)^{-1/2} f'] \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{2}(rfh)^{-1} f' - \frac{1}{2}(rh^2)^{-1} h'. \end{aligned} \quad (5.17)$$

We assume h is

$$h(r) = \left[1 - \frac{2m(r)}{r} \right]^{-1}, \quad (5.18)$$

and if we write

$$f = \exp(2\phi), \quad (5.19)$$

the equation (5.16) becomes

$$\frac{d\phi}{dr} = \frac{[m(r) + 4\pi p(r)r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]}. \quad (5.20)$$

Proof for hydrostatic equilibrium . We substitute equations (5.18) and (5.19) into equation (5.16) we get,

$$\begin{aligned}
8\pi p &= (rfh)^{-1} - r^{-2}(1 - h^{-1}) \\
&= \frac{f'}{f} \frac{1}{rh} - \frac{(1 - h^{-1})}{r^2} \\
&= 2 \frac{d\phi}{dr} \frac{1 - \frac{2m(r)}{r}}{r} - \frac{\frac{2m(r)}{r}}{r^2} \\
&= 2 \frac{d\phi}{dr} \frac{r - 2m(r)}{r^2} - \frac{2m(r)}{r^3} \\
2 \frac{d\phi}{dr} \frac{r - 2m(r)}{r^2} &= 8\pi p + \frac{2m(r)}{r^3} \\
\frac{d\phi}{dr} &= \frac{4\pi p + \frac{m(r)}{r^3}}{\frac{r - 2m(r)}{r^2}} \\
&= \frac{[m(r) + 4\pi p r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]}
\end{aligned} \tag{5.21}$$

as previously illustrated. \square

To see what happens to the pressure and density it will be useful to consider the TOV equation.

$$\frac{dp}{dr} = \frac{-[\rho(r) + p(r)] [m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]} \tag{5.22}$$

Proof. Consider the stress energy of a perfect fluid is in the equation (5.1) and it satisfies the equation (5.4) which yield,

$$(p + \rho)u^a \nabla_a u_b + (g_{ab} + u_a u_b) \nabla^a p = 0 \tag{5.23}$$

Now consider,

$$(e_1)_b \nabla_a T^{ab} = 0, \tag{5.24}$$

where, $(e_1)_b = h^{1/2}(\text{dr})_b = h^{-1/2}(\partial/\partial r)_b$

We can reduce the equation (5.24) into the equation (5.25) because $(e_1)_b$ is pointing

in the r -direction, which is perpendicular to u^a .

$$\begin{aligned}
(e_1)_b [(p + \rho) u^a \nabla_a u^b + (\delta_a^b + u_a u^b) \nabla^a p] &= 0 \\
h^{-1/2} (0, 1, 0, 0)_b [(p + \rho) u^a \nabla_a u^b + (\delta_a^b + u_a u^b) \nabla^a p] &= 0 \\
h^{-1/2} (p + \rho) (u^a \nabla_a u^b)_b + h^{-1/2} \frac{dp}{dr} &= 0
\end{aligned} \tag{5.25}$$

Now we consider,

$$\begin{aligned}
(u^a \nabla_a u^b) &= u^a [\partial_a u^b + \Gamma_{ca}^b u^c] = u^a \Gamma_{ca}^b u^c \\
&= \frac{1}{f} \Gamma_{tt}^b = \frac{1}{f} \frac{1}{2} g^{bc} [-g_{tt,e} + g_{te,t} + g_{et,t}] \\
&= \frac{1}{f} g^{be} \frac{1}{2} (f)_{,e} = \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{f} \nabla^b f \\
&= \nabla^b \phi = \frac{d\phi}{dr}
\end{aligned} \tag{5.26}$$

Now we substitute equation (5.20) into equation (5.25) we get,

$$\begin{aligned}
h^{-1/2} (p + \rho) \frac{d\phi}{dr} + h^{-1/2} \frac{dp}{dr} &= 0 \\
\frac{dp}{dr} &= -(p + \rho) \frac{d\phi}{dr} \\
\frac{dp}{dr} &= -(p + \rho) \frac{[m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]}
\end{aligned} \tag{5.27}$$

Equation (5.27) is known as the *Tolman-Oppenheimer-Volkoff equation* of hydrostatic equilibrium. \square

This equation applies only for a perfect fluid ($p_r = p_t$) in Schwarzschild coordinates. There are generalizations appropriate to other coordinate systems. In the non-relativistic Newtonian approximation this simplifies to ($p \ll \rho$, $2m(r)/r \ll 1$):

$$\frac{dp}{dr} = -\frac{[\rho(r) m(r)]}{r^2} \tag{5.28}$$

which is something that is very easy to derive in *Newton's theory of gravity*.

If we assume $\rho(r)$ and hence $m(r)$ are given, then the TOV is a nonlinear first-order

ODE for $p(r)$ called a Riccati equation. Given $p(0)$ a unique solution $p(r)$ necessarily exists, and can be used to reconstruct the function $\zeta(r)$ via:

$$\zeta(r) = \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]} dr \right\} \quad (5.29)$$

Proof. Firstly, start with some static spherically symmetric geometry in Schwarzschild (curvature) coordinates

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (5.30)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere.

When

$$\begin{aligned} 8\pi p &= G_{rr} = \frac{2B\zeta' r - \zeta + B\zeta}{r^2 \zeta} \\ 8\pi p &= \frac{2B}{r} \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} - \frac{1}{r^2} + \frac{B}{r^2} \\ \frac{2B}{r} \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} &= 8\pi p + \frac{1}{r^2} - \frac{B}{r^2} \\ \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} &= \frac{4\pi p r}{B} + \frac{(1-B)}{2Br} \end{aligned} \quad (5.31)$$

when $B = 1 - 2m(r)/r$, then we get

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} &= \frac{4\pi p r}{(1 - 2m(r)/r)} + \frac{1 - (1 - 2m(r)/r)}{2(1 - 2m(r)/r)r} \\ \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} &= \frac{m(r) + 4\pi p r^3}{r^2 (1 - 2m(r)/r)} \\ \frac{d \ln(\zeta)}{dr} &= \frac{m(r) + 4\pi p r^3}{r^2 (1 - 2m(r)/r)} \\ \ln(\zeta) &= \int \left(\frac{m(r) + 4\pi p r^3}{r^2 (1 - 2m(r)/r)} \right) dr \\ \exp(\ln(\zeta)) &= \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m(r) + 4\pi p r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]} dr \right\} \\ \zeta &= \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m(r) + 4\pi p r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]} dr \right\} \end{aligned} \quad (5.32)$$

as required. □

In this way, starting from $\rho(r)$ you can construct first the function $m(r) = 4\pi \int \rho(r)r^2 dr$, then (via the TOV) the pressure profile $p(r)$, and finally via the above the gravitational redshift $\zeta(r)$.

Suppose in contrast that the pressure profile $p(r)$ is given, then the TOV equation can be rearranged into a nonlinear first order PDE for $m(r)$:

$$\frac{1}{4\pi r^2} \frac{dm(r)}{dr} = -p(r) - \frac{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]}{[m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3]} \frac{dp}{dr} \quad (5.33)$$

Proof. We substitute equations (5.18) and (5.19) into equation (5.15) to get,

$$\frac{dm(r)}{dr} = 4\pi \rho(r) r^2, \quad (5.34)$$

and rearrange in term of $\rho(r)$ so,

$$\rho(r) = \frac{1}{4\pi r^2} \frac{dm(r)}{dr} \quad (5.35)$$

rearrange the equation (5.22) into,

$$\rho(r) = -p(r) - \frac{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]}{[m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3]} \frac{dp}{dr} \quad (5.36)$$

now substitute equation (5.35) into equation (5.36), we get

$$\frac{1}{4\pi r^2} \frac{dm(r)}{dr} = -p(r) - \frac{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]}{[m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3]} \frac{dp}{dr} \quad (5.37)$$

□

This is an Abel equation (2nd type, class A). There is no simple general solution. However given $p(r)$ and the initial data $m(0) = 0$ this can in principle be solved to determine $m(r)$. Once this is done $\zeta(r)$ is again reconstructed via

$$\zeta(r) = \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m(r)/r]} dr \right\} \quad (5.38)$$

5.4 Solution generating theorems

5.4.1 Four theorems

The first four theorems we presented in chapter 3 were first explicitly published in [6]. We now rephrase the theorems in slightly different formalism, and demonstrate an independent way of proving them. Indeed, we can re-write these theorems directly in terms of pressure and density profiles $p(r)$ and $\rho(r)$.

Firstly, start with some static spherically symmetric geometry in Schwarzschild (curvature) coordinates

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (5.39)$$

and then assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. Our original four theorems can be written in the form

Theorem 1. *Suppose $\{\zeta_0(r), m_0(r)\}$ represents a perfect fluid sphere. Define*

$$m_1(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} \right)^2 r^3 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} dr \right\}. \quad (5.40)$$

Then for all λ , the geometry defined by holding $\zeta_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 - \frac{2[m_0(r) + \lambda m_1(r)]}{r}} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (5.41)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere.

Theorem 2. *Let $\{\zeta_0(r), m_0(r)\}$ describe a perfect fluid sphere. For all σ and ϵ , the geometry defined by holding $m_0(r)$ fixed and setting*

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (5.42)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere.

Theorem 3. Let $\{\zeta_0(r), m_0(r)\}$ describe a perfect fluid sphere. For all σ , ϵ , and λ , the three-parameters geometry defined by

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2[m_0(r) + \lambda m_1(r)]}{r}}} \right\}^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 - \frac{2[m_0(r) + \lambda m_1(r)]}{r}} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (5.43)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, where $m_1(r)$ is defined as above.

Theorem 4. Let $\{\zeta_0(r), m_0(r)\}$ describe a perfect fluid sphere. For all σ , ϵ , and λ , the three-parameters geometry defined by

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{1 - \frac{2[m_0(r) + \lambda \tilde{m}_1(r)]}{r}} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (5.44)$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, where $\tilde{m}_1(r)$ is defined as

$$\tilde{m}_1(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta(r)}{\zeta(r) + r \zeta'(r)} \right)^2 r^3 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'(r)}{\zeta(r)} \frac{\zeta(r) - r \zeta'(r)}{\zeta(r) + r \zeta'(r)} dr \right\}, \quad (5.45)$$

depending on $\zeta = \zeta_0 \zeta_1$, where

$$\zeta_1(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}. \quad (5.46)$$

5.4.2 Four theorems in terms of pressure and density

We can re-write these theorems in terms of pressure and density profiles $p(r)$ and $\rho(r)$.

Consider Theorem 1. By definition ζ is unaffected under the transformation. But we have a formula for $\zeta(r)$ in terms of $p(r)$ and $m(r)$. Let $m_2(r) = m_0(r) + \lambda m_1(r)$ and $p_2(r)$ be the mass profile and pressure profile after applying theorem 1. Then

$$\frac{[m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} = \frac{[m_2(r) + 4\pi p_2(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m_2(r)/r]} \quad (5.47)$$

which we can rearrange to yield

$$m_2(r) + 4\pi p_2(r) r^3 = [m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3] \frac{[1 - 2m_2(r)/r]}{[1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} \quad (5.48)$$

Furthermore, we can rearrange it into

$$4\pi p_2(r) r^3 = -m_2(r) + [m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3] \frac{[1 - 2m_2(r)/r]}{[1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} \quad (5.49)$$

Now we substitute $m_2(r) = m_0(r) + \lambda m_1(r)$ into equation (5.49),

$$4\pi p_2(r) r^3 = -m_0(r) - \lambda m_1(r) + [m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3] \frac{[1 - 2(m_0(r) + \lambda m_1(r))/r]}{[1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} \quad (5.50)$$

After a bit of algebra:

$$\begin{aligned} 4\pi p_2(r) r^3 &= \frac{-\lambda m_1(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) - 8\pi p_0(r) r^2 m_0(r) - 8\lambda \pi p_0(r) r^2 m_1(r)}{[1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} \\ &= \frac{-\lambda m_1(r)(1 - 8\pi p_0(r) r^2)}{[1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} + \frac{4\pi p_0(r) r^3 [1 - 2m_0(r)/r]}{[1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} \\ &= 4\pi p_0(r) r^3 - \frac{\lambda m_1(r)(1 + 8\pi p_0(r) r^2)}{[1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} \end{aligned} \quad (5.51)$$

rearrange it in terms of $p_2(r)$,

$$p_2(r) = p_0(r) - \lambda m_1(r) \left[\frac{1}{4\pi r^3} \right] \left[\frac{1 + 8\pi p_0(r) r^2}{1 - 2m_0(r)/r} \right] \quad (5.52)$$

This allows us to rewrite Theorem 1 as follows:

Theorem 13 (Theorem 1B:). *Suppose we are given a pair of functions $p_0(r)$ and $\rho_0(r)$ that satisfy the TOV.*

We use these functions to construct $m_0(r)$, $\zeta_0(r)$, and $m_1(r)$ as follows:

$$m_0(r) = 4\pi \int_0^r \rho_0(\bar{r}) \bar{r}^2 d\bar{r} \quad (5.53)$$

$$\zeta_0(r) = \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} dr \right\} \quad (5.54)$$

$$m_1(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} \right)^2 r^3 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} dr \right\} \quad (5.55)$$

Then for all λ , the pair of functions

$$p_2(r) = p_0(r) - \lambda m_1(r) \left[\frac{1}{4\pi r^3} \right] \left[\frac{1 + 8\pi p_0(r) r^2}{1 - 2m_0(r)/r} \right] \quad (5.56)$$

$$\rho_2 = \rho_0(r) + \frac{\lambda}{4\pi r^2} \frac{dm_1(r)}{dr} \quad (5.57)$$

also satisfies the TOV and so defines a perfect fluid sphere.

Similar logic can be applied to theorem 2. Note that in that case you are considering the transformation

$$m_0(r) \rightarrow m_2(r) = m_0(r) \quad (5.58)$$

$$\zeta_0(r) \rightarrow \zeta_2(r) = \zeta_0(r) \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\} \quad (5.59)$$

So that $m_0(r)$ remains fixed. Now from the $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}}$ component of the Einstein tensor: consider the equation below

$$\frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} = \frac{m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3}{r^2 (1 - 2m(r)/r)} \quad (5.60)$$

and rearrange this equation in term of $p(r)$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} r^2 (1 - 2m(r)/r) &= m(r) + 4\pi p(r) r^3 \\ 4\pi p(r) r^3 &= -m(r) + r^2 (1 - 2m(r)/r) \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} \\ p(r) &= -\frac{m(r)}{4\pi r^3} + \frac{1}{4\pi r} (1 - 2m(r)/r) \frac{\zeta'}{\zeta} \end{aligned} \quad (5.61)$$

when

$$\frac{m(r)}{4\pi r^3} = \frac{m(r)/3}{(4\pi/3) r^3} = \frac{1}{3} \bar{\rho}(r) \quad (5.62)$$

Now we have $p(r)$ equal to

$$p(r) = -\frac{1}{3} \bar{\rho}(r) + \frac{1}{4\pi r} (1 - 2m(r)/r) \frac{\zeta'(r)}{\zeta(r)} \quad (5.63)$$

Then in particular

$$p_2(r) = -\frac{1}{3} \bar{\rho}_0(r) + \frac{1}{4\pi r} (1 - 2m_0(r)/r) \frac{\zeta_2'(r)}{\zeta_2(r)} \quad (5.64)$$

so that

$$p_2(r) = -\frac{1}{3} \bar{\rho}_0(r) + \frac{1}{4\pi r} \left(1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}\right) \frac{\left[\zeta_0(r) \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\} \right]'}{\zeta_0(r) \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}} \quad (5.65)$$

That is

$$\begin{aligned} p_2(r) &= -\frac{1}{3} \bar{\rho}_0(r) + \frac{1}{4\pi r} \left(1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}\right) \frac{\zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{4\pi r} \left(1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}\right) \frac{\left\{ \epsilon \frac{r}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}}{\left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}} \end{aligned} \quad (5.66)$$

we know $p(r) = -\frac{1}{3} \bar{\rho}(r) + \frac{1}{4\pi r} (1 - 2m(r)/r) \frac{\zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r)}$, so that

$$p_2(r) = p_0(r) + \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi} \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}} \zeta_0(r)^{-2} \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}^{-1} \quad (5.67)$$

This leads us to:

Theorem 14 (Theorem 2B:). *Suppose we are given a pair of functions $p_0(r)$ and $\rho_0(r)$ that satisfy the TOV.*

Use these functions to construct $m_0(r)$ and $\zeta_0(r)$ as follows:

$$m_0(r) = 4\pi \int_0^r \rho_0(\bar{r}) \bar{r}^2 \, d\bar{r} \quad (5.68)$$

$$\zeta_0(r) = \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} dr \right\} \quad (5.69)$$

Then for all σ and ϵ , the pair of functions

$$\rho_2(r) = \rho_0(r) \quad (5.70)$$

$$p_2(r) = p_0(r) + \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi} \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}} \zeta_0(r)^{-2} \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}^{-1} \quad (5.71)$$

also satisfies the TOV and so defines a perfect fluid sphere.

Having now found these theorems 1B and 2B, is now useful to define a new theorem by composing them. All together we can consider this as a single process by introducing the following theorem:

Theorem 15 (Theorem 3B:). *Suppose we are given a pair of functions $p_0(r)$ and $\rho_0(r)$ that satisfy the TOV.*

Use these functions to construct $m_0(r)$, $\zeta_0(r)$, and $m_1(r)$ as follows:

$$m_0(r) = 4\pi \int_0^r \rho_0(\bar{r}) \bar{r}^2 d\bar{r} \quad (5.72)$$

$$\zeta_0(r) = \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} dr \right\} \quad (5.73)$$

$$m_1(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta_0'(r)} \right)^2 r^3 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta_0'(r)} dr \right\} \quad (5.74)$$

Then for all σ , ϵ , and λ , the pair of functions

$$\begin{aligned} p_2(r) = & p_0(r) - \lambda m_1(r) \left[\frac{1}{4\pi r^3} \right] \left[\frac{1 + 8\pi p_0(r) r^2}{1 - 2m_0(r)/r} \right] \\ & + \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi} \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_2(r)}{r}} \zeta_0(r)^{-2} \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_2(r)}{r}}} \right\}^{-1} \end{aligned} \quad (5.75)$$

$$\rho_2 = \rho_0(r) + \frac{\lambda}{4\pi r^2} \frac{dm_1(r)}{dr} \quad (5.76)$$

where $m_2(r) = m_0(r) + \lambda m_1(r)$, also satisfy the TOV and so define a perfect fluid sphere.

Theorem 16 (Theorem 4B:). *Suppose we are given a pair of functions $p_0(r)$ and $\rho_0(r)$ that satisfy the TOV.*

Use these functions to construct $m_0(r)$, $\zeta_0(r)$, and $m_1(r)$ as follows:

$$m_0(r) = 4\pi \int_0^r \rho_0(\bar{r}) \bar{r}^2 d\bar{r} \quad (5.77)$$

$$\zeta_0(r) = \exp \left\{ \int \frac{[m_0(r) + 4\pi p_0(r) r^3]}{r^2 [1 - 2m_0(r)/r]} dr \right\} \quad (5.78)$$

$$\tilde{m}_1(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta(r)}{\zeta(r) + r \zeta'(r)} \right)^2 r^3 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'(r)}{\zeta(r)} \frac{\zeta(r) - r \zeta'(r)}{\zeta(r) + r \zeta'(r)} dr \right\}, \quad (5.79)$$

depending on $\zeta = \zeta_0 \zeta_1$, where

$$\zeta_1(r) = \left\{ \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2m_0(r)}{r}}} \right\}. \quad (5.80)$$

Then the pair of functions

$$p_2(r) = p_0(r) - \lambda m_1(r) \left[\frac{1}{4\pi r^3} \right] \left[\frac{1 + 8\pi p_0(r) r^2}{1 - 2m_0(r)/r} \right] \quad (5.81)$$

$$\rho_2 = \rho_0(r) + \frac{\lambda}{4\pi r^2} \frac{d\tilde{m}_1(r)}{dr} \quad (5.82)$$

also satisfy the TOV and so define a perfect fluid sphere.

5.4.3 Discussion

In this chapter we have rephrased the theorems 1, 2, 3, and 4 of chapter 3 directly in terms of the TOV equation, and consequently in terms of the pressure profile and density profile. We have done this by rephrasing theorem 1 in a slightly different formalism, and developing an independent proof that is easy to rewrite in terms of the pressure and density profiles — $\rho(r)$ and $p(r)$ — resulting in the theorem we call theorem 1B. Similar logic, involving the transformation T_2 , can be applied to theorem 2 — now leading to theorem 2B. With these new theorems 1B and 2B in hand, we can compose them in various ways to obtain theorems 3B and 4B.

Some seed geometries and their descendants in term of pressure and density via Theorem 1B

Seed	$p_0(r)$	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	$\rho_0(r)$	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$
Minkowski	0	$-\frac{\lambda}{4\pi}$	0	$\frac{3\lambda}{4\pi}$
exterior Schwarzschild	0	$\frac{3500 \lambda (r-a)^2}{\pi r^2}$	0	$-\frac{3500 \lambda (r-a)(3r-5a)}{\pi r^2}$
de Sitter	$-\frac{3}{8\pi R^2}$	$p_0(r) - \frac{\lambda(R^2-3r^2)}{4\pi(-R^2+2r^2)}$	$\frac{3}{8\pi R^2}$	$\rho_0(r) + \frac{\lambda}{4\pi} \frac{(7R^2r^2-3R^4-6r^4)}{(-R^2+2r^2)^2}$
Tolman V ($A=0$)	$-\frac{(n+1)^2}{8r^2\pi(n^2-2)}$	$p_0(r) - \frac{\lambda r \left(-\frac{(2n+n^2)}{(n+2)}\right) (2n+3)}{4\pi(n+2)^2}$	$\frac{-1+n^2}{8r^2\pi(-2+n^2)}$	$\rho_0(r) + \frac{\lambda r \left(-\frac{(2n+n^2)}{(n+2)}\right) (3+2n)(2-n)}{4\pi(n+2)^3}$
S1	$\frac{1}{2\pi r^2}$	$p_0(r) - \frac{5\lambda}{36\pi r^{(4/3)}}$	0	$\frac{5\lambda}{108\pi r^{(4/3)}}$
M-W III	$-\frac{(a-6r)(a+2r)}{56\pi r^2 a^2}$	$p_0(r) + \lambda \left(\frac{r}{5}\right)^{(\frac{1}{3})} \frac{(r-a)(2a+3r)}{9(a+r)(-4r+3a)^{(\frac{4}{3})}}$	$\frac{3(a^2+4r^2)}{56\pi r^2 a^2}$	$\rho_0(r) + \frac{\lambda}{9\pi} \left(\frac{r}{5}\right)^{(\frac{1}{3})} \frac{(12r^2-21ar+10a^2)}{(-4r+3a)^{(\frac{4}{3})}}$
Heint IIa ($C=0$)	$-\frac{9a(-1+ar^2)}{16\pi(1+ar^2)^2}$	$p_0(r) - \frac{\lambda(7ar^2+1)}{12\sqrt{3}\pi(1+ar^2)^2 \sqrt{-4ar^2-1}}$	$\frac{3a(3+ar^2)}{16\pi(1+ar^2)^2}$	$\rho_0(r) - \frac{\lambda(1+3ar^2)}{4\sqrt{3}\pi(1+ar^2)^2 (-4ar^2-1)^{(\frac{3}{2})}}$

Table 5.1: Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 1B in terms of pressure and density profile.

Some seed geometries and their descendants in term of pressure and density via Theorem 2B

Seed	$p_{\text{Th2}}(r)$	$\rho_{\text{Th2}}(r)$
Minkowski	$\frac{\epsilon}{4\pi\left(\sigma + \frac{\epsilon r^2}{2}\right)}$	0
exterior Schwarzschild	$\frac{1}{2\pi(r^2+5ra-30a^2 + \frac{2\sigma\sqrt{r(r-2a)}}{\epsilon} + 15\sqrt{r(r-2a)}a^2 \ln(r-a+\sqrt{r(r-2a)}))}$	0
de Sitter	$p_0(r) + \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi\sqrt{R^2-r^2}\left(\frac{\sigma}{R} + \frac{\epsilon R^2}{\sqrt{-R^2+r^2}}\right)}$	$\rho_0(r)$
Tolman V ($A=0$)	$p_0(r) + \frac{\frac{\epsilon}{2-n^2}}{2\pi r^2\left(2B^2nr^{(1+n)}\sqrt{\frac{1}{2-n^2}-\epsilon}\right)}$	$\rho_0(r)$
S1	$p_0(r) + \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi r^4\left(\sigma - \frac{\epsilon}{2r^2}\right)}$	0
M-W III	$p_0(r) + \frac{\epsilon}{\frac{2\sqrt{7}\pi A r a \sigma(r-a)}{\sqrt{a^2-r^2}} + 7\pi r a \epsilon}$	$\rho_0(r)$
Heint IIa ($C=0$)	$p_0(r) + \frac{\epsilon}{8\pi \frac{(1+ar^2)^{(7/2)}}{\sqrt{4-2ar^2}} \left(\sigma + \frac{2\epsilon(5+2ar^2)}{27a(1+ar^2)^{(3/2)}\sqrt{4-2ar^2}}\right)}$	$\rho_0(r)$

Table 5.2: Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 2B in terms of pressure and density profile.

Some seed geometries and their descendants in term of pressure and density via Theorem 3B

Seed	$p_{\text{Th3}}(r)$	$\rho_{\text{Th3}}(r)$
Minkowski	$p_0(r) + \frac{\epsilon}{\frac{4\pi\sigma}{\sqrt{1-2\lambda r^2}} - \frac{2\pi\epsilon}{\lambda}}$	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$
exterior Schwarzschild	[integral]	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$
de Sitter	$p_0(r) - \frac{\lambda(R^2-3r^2)}{4\pi(-R^2+2r^2)}$ $+ \frac{\epsilon \sqrt{1 - \frac{r^2}{R^2} + \frac{2\lambda r^2(-R^2+r^2)}{(-R^2+2r^2)}}}{4\pi(R^2-r^2)^2 \left(\frac{\sigma}{R^2} + \epsilon \int \frac{rR^2}{(R^2-r^2) \sqrt{1 - \frac{r^2}{R^2} + \frac{2\lambda r^2(-R^2+r^2)}{(-R^2+2r^2)}}} dr \right)}$	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$
Tolman V ($A=0$)	$p_0(r) - \frac{\lambda r \frac{(1+n)(-2n)}{(2+n)} (3+2n)}{4\pi(2+n)^2}$ $- \frac{\epsilon \sqrt{\frac{1}{(2-n)^2} + \frac{2\lambda r \frac{2(2-2n^2)}{(2+n)}}{(2+n)^2}}}{4\pi B^2 r^{(1+n)^2} \left(\sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r(-1-2n)}{B^2 \sqrt{\frac{1}{(2-n)^2} + \frac{2\lambda r \frac{2(2-2n^2)}{(2+n)}}{(2+n)^2}}} dr \right)}$	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$
S1	$p_0(r) + \frac{\lambda}{12 r^{(4/3)} \pi} +$ $\frac{\epsilon}{\left(2\pi r^4 \left(\frac{6\sigma}{\sqrt{9-2\lambda r^{(2/3)}}} + \epsilon \left(-\frac{1}{r^2} + \frac{5\lambda}{3} \left(-\frac{1}{6r^{(4/3)}} + \frac{\lambda}{9} \left(-\frac{1}{2r^{(2/3)}} - \frac{\lambda}{3\sqrt{9-2\lambda r^{(2/3)}}} \operatorname{arctanh}\left(\frac{3}{\sqrt{9-2\lambda r^{(2/3)}}}\right) \right) \right) \right) \right) \right)}$	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$
M-W III	$p_0(r) - \frac{\lambda}{9} \left(\frac{r}{5} \right)^{(1/3)} \frac{(2a-3r)}{(-4r+3a)^{(4/3)}}$ $+ \frac{\epsilon \sqrt{\frac{(a^2-r^2)}{7a^2} + \frac{2\lambda r^{(7/3)}(r-a)5^{(2/3)}}{45(-4r+3a)^{(4/3)}}}}{2\pi A r(r-a) \left(\sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{1}{A(r-a) \sqrt{\frac{(a^2-r^2)}{7a^2} + \frac{2\lambda r^{(7/3)}(r-a)5^{(2/3)}}{45(-4r+3a)^{(4/3)}}}} dr \right)}$	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$
Heint IIa ($C=0$)	$p_0(r) - \frac{\lambda(7ar^2+1)}{12\pi\sqrt{-4ar^2-1}}$ $- \frac{\epsilon \sqrt{\frac{1}{(1+ar^2)} \left((2-ar^2) - \frac{4\lambda r^2}{3\sqrt{-12ar^2-3}} \right)}}{4\pi(1+ar^2)^3 \left(\sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r}{(1+ar^2) \sqrt{\left((2-ar^2) - \frac{4\lambda r^2}{3\sqrt{-12ar^2-3}} \right)}} dr \right)}$	$\rho_{\text{Th1}}(r)$

Table 5.3: Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 3B in terms of pressure and density profile. The notation “[integral]” denotes a metric so complicated that explicitly writing out the relevant integral is so tedious that it does not seem worthwhile.

Some seed geometries and their descendants in term of pressure and density via Theorem 4B

Seed	$p_{\text{Th4}}(r)$	$\rho_{\text{Th4}}(r)$
Minkowski	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	$\frac{\lambda(5\epsilon r^2+6\sigma)}{4\pi(2\sigma+3\epsilon r^2)^{(5/3)}}$
exterior Schwarzschild	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	[integral]
de Sitter	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	[integral]
Tolman V ($A = 0$)	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	[integral]
S1	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	$\frac{\lambda(10\sigma r^2-3\epsilon)}{4\pi(6\sigma r^2-\epsilon)^{(5/3)}}$
M-W III	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	[integral]
Heint IIa ($C=0$)	$p_{\text{Th1}}(r)$	[integral]

Table 5.4: Seed solutions and their generalizations derived via theorems 4B in terms of pressure and density profile. The notation “[integral]” denotes a metric so complicated that explicitly writing out the relevant integral is so tedious that it does not seem worthwhile.

We present several tables that exhibit seed solutions and the geometries generated from them by combining all the various theorems. Table (5.1) shows some seed geometries and their descendants as obtained via theorem 1B, and similarly table (5.2) shows some seed geometries and their descendants obtained via theorem 2B. Finally table (5.3) and (5.4) deal with theorems 3B and 4B. We emphasise that theorem 2B does not affect the density profile, and only the pressure profile changes.

Chapter 6

Conclusions

As the range of problems tackled is so diverse, it is hard to think of a concise way of summarising all of them. Indeed, to a large extent much of the work has already been summarised at the end of each section. Instead of explaining the problems again and how far through completion they are, I would like to leave with a list of things that I believe are useful to understand the overall concept of the thesis.

This thesis has been written with the goal of making it accessible to people with a basic background in general relativity, especially in coordinate conditions, perfect fluid spheres in general relativity.

6.1 The main analysis: Structure of the thesis

- The thesis summarized the basic concept of special relativity to make general relativity easier to understand. General relativity is the relativistic theory of gravitation. It is required from any new physical theory to satisfy the so called principle of correspondence.
- Coordinate conditions are important for the long time scale simulations of relativistic systems. We demonstrated the importance of coordinate conditions in general relativity and proposed a method of looking for nice solutions of the Einstein equations. In addition, a number of examples are given to illustrate the

method.

- We introduced “algorithmic” techniques that permit one to generate large classes of perfect fluid spheres in a purely mechanical way. Furthermore, we extended these algorithmic ideas, by proving several solution-generating theorems of varying levels of complexity. We have developed several transformation theorems that map perfect fluid spheres to perfect fluid spheres using Schwarzschild coordinates. Furthermore, we used these transformations as a basis for classifying different types of perfect fluid sphere solutions.
- In chapter 4, we have developed several transformation theorems that map perfect fluid spheres to perfect fluid sphere using other coordinates.
- We rephased Theorems 1, 2, 3 and 4 in chapter 3 directly in terms of the TOV equation.

6.2 Further interesting issues

I would like to leave with the list of things that I believe are interesting to continue to analyze. In addition, all the lists below are further issues that might be interesting to looking at.

- For a Riemannian geometry in $(2+1)$ dimensions, we can calculate the Ricci Scalar, the Ricci tensor and the Riemann tensor. However, all results are too difficult to analyze in detail. This is one of the physically interesting cases, and this is a case that I would like to examine in more detail.
- Similar for a Riemannian geometry in $(3+1)$ dimensions. This is also one of the physical interesting case, and this is the case that will be most difficult to analyze in detail. This is a challenging case that I would like to work through in more detail.
- We analysed a generic spacetime using both ADM and reverse-ADM (Kaluza–Klein) decompositions. However, we found that for the general ADM case coordinate techniques are too complicated to contemplate (page 514 of [17]). The

inverse ADM decomposition can calculate the Christoffel symbols from equation (2.178). This is so interesting to find the techniques for contemplation.

- The other things that would be interesting is consider other coordinate systems: Generalize the theorems which we derived for Schwarzschild coordinates or coordinates in Chapter 4 to a number of other coordinate systems. This may allow us to develop extra relations between the known solutions.
- For Theorem 8 in Isotropic coordinate, it would be interesting to see what would happen when we feed this theorem a Minkowski space seed. In addition, this is interesting to find simple ways of generating interesting solutions.
- For Theorem 9 in Gaussian polar coordinate, Theorem 10 in Buchdahl coordinates, Theorem 11 in Synge isothermal coordinates, and Theorem 12 in Exponential coordinates, it would be interesting to see what would happen when we feed this theorem a Minkowski space seed. In addition, this is interesting to find the way that we can do to $R(r)$ to make its ODE look nicer.

All the above suggestions would be interesting and feasible, although some of them would be more tedious to extend to standard results in general relativity. However, this thesis would provide a platform for better understanding coordinate conditions and the perfect fluid sphere in general relativity. This thesis developed a way of looking for nice new solutions of the Einstein equations. Furthermore, the goal of this thesis was to classify the different types of perfect fluid sphere solutions. This thesis has hopefully served as a brief introduction the “Algorithms” ideas by showing how to prove several solution-generating theorems of varying levels of complexity. Finally, we illustrated the formalism to develop extra relations between the known solutions for Schwarzschild coordinates and other coordinates. The generating theorems in perfect fluid spheres lead to additional useful “exact solutions”.

Appendix A

Generating perfect fluid spheres in general relativity

Petarpa Boonserm, Matt Visser, and Silke Weinfurtner

Electronic preprint gr-qc/0503007.

Published as **Physical Review D** **71** (2005) 124037

Ever since Karl Schwarzschild's 1916 discovery of the spacetime geometry describing the interior of a particular idealized general relativistic star — a static spherically symmetric blob of fluid with position independent density — the general relativity community has continued to devote considerable time and energy to understanding the general-relativistic static perfect fluid sphere. Over the last 90 years a tangle of specific perfect fluid spheres has been discovered, with most of these specific examples seemingly independent from each other. To bring some order to this chaos, in this article we develop several new transformation theorems that map perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres. These transformation theorems sometimes lead to unexpected connections between previously known perfect fluid spheres, sometimes lead to new previously unknown perfect fluid spheres, and in general can be used to develop a systematic way of classifying the set of all perfect fluid spheres.

A.1 Introduction

General relativistic perfect fluid spheres, or more precisely general relativistic static perfect fluid spheres, are interesting because they are first approximations to any attempt at building a realistic model for a general relativistic star [1, 2, 3, 4]. The central idea is to start solely with spherical symmetry, which implies that in orthonormal components the stress energy tensor takes the form

$$T_{\hat{a}\hat{b}} = \begin{bmatrix} \rho & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & p_r & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & p_t & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & p_t \end{bmatrix} \quad (\text{A.1})$$

and then use the perfect fluid constraint $p_r = p_t$, making the radial pressure equal to the transverse pressure. By using the Einstein equations, plus spherical symmetry, the equality $p_r = p_t$ for the pressures becomes the statement

$$G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}. \quad (\text{A.2})$$

In terms of the metric components, this leads to an ordinary differential equation [ODE], which then constrains the spacetime geometry, for *any* perfect fluid sphere.

Over the last 90 years, many “ad hoc” approaches to solving this differential equation have been explored, often by picking special coordinate systems, or making simple ansatze for one or other of the metric components [5, 6, 7, 8]. (For recent overviews see [1, 2, 3].) The big change over the last several years has been the introduction of “algorithmic” techniques that permit one to generate large classes perfect fluid spheres in a purely mechanical way [9, 10, 11]. In this article we will extend these algorithmic ideas, by proving several solution-generating theorems of varying levels of complexity. We shall then explore the formal properties of these solution-generating theorems (which generate the notion of the Buchdahl transformation) and then will use these theorems to classify some of the previously known exact solutions, and additionally will generate several new previously unknown perfect fluid solutions.

A.2 Solution generating theorems

Start with some static spherically symmetric geometry in Schwarzschild (curvature) coordinates

$$ds^2 = -\zeta(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (\text{A.3})$$

and assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. That is, $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$. While $G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}} = G_{\hat{\phi}\hat{\phi}}$ is always fulfilled due to spherical symmetry, setting $G_{\hat{r}\hat{r}} = G_{\hat{\theta}\hat{\theta}}$ supplies us with an ODE

$$[r(r\zeta)']B' + [2r^2\zeta'' - 2(r\zeta)']B + 2\zeta = 0, \quad (\text{A.4})$$

which reduces the freedom to choose the two functions in equation (A.3) to one. This equation is a first order-linear non-homogeneous equation in $B(r)$. Thus — once you have chosen a $\zeta(r)$ — this equation can always be solved for $B(r)$. Solving for $B(r)$ in terms of $\zeta(r)$ is the basis of [10, 11], (and is the basis for Theorem 1 below). On the other hand, we can also re-group this same equation as

$$2r^2B\zeta'' + (r^2B' - 2rB)\zeta' + (rB' - 2B + 2)\zeta = 0, \quad (\text{A.5})$$

which is a linear homogeneous 2nd order ODE for $\zeta(r)$, which will become the basis for Theorem 2 below. The question we are going to answer in this section is, how to systematically “deform” this geometry while still retaining the perfect fluid property. That is, suppose we start with the specific geometry defined by

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (\text{A.6})$$

and assume it represents a perfect fluid sphere. We will show how to “deform” this solution by applying five different transformation theorems on $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$, such that the outcome still presents a perfect fluid sphere. The outcome of this process will depend on one or more free parameters, and so automatically generates an entire family of perfect fluid spheres of which the original starting point is only one member. In addition, we analyze what happens if you apply these theorems more than once, iterating them in various ways.

A.2.1 Four theorems

The first theorem we present is a variant of a result first explicitly published in [11], though another variant of this result can also be found in [3]. We first re-phrase the theorem in of [11] slightly different formalism, and demonstrate an independent way of proving it. Using our proof it is easy to show that by applying theorem 1 more than once no further solutions will be obtained, therefore the transformation in theorem 1 is, (in a certain sense to be made precise below), “idempotent”.

Theorem 1. *Suppose $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ represents a perfect fluid sphere. Define*

$$\Delta_0(r) = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} \right)^2 r^2 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta'_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta'_0(r)} dr \right\}. \quad (\text{A.7})$$

Then for all λ , the geometry defined by holding $\zeta_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r) + \lambda \Delta_0(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (\text{A.8})$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_1(\lambda) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_0 + \lambda \Delta_0(\zeta_0)\} \quad (\text{A.9})$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres. Furthermore a second application of the transformation does not yield new information, T_1 is “idempotent”, in the sense that

$$T_1(\lambda_n) \circ \dots \circ T_1(\lambda_2) \circ T_1(\lambda_1) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \left\{ \zeta_0, B_0 + \left(\sum_{i=1}^n \lambda_i \right) \Delta_0(\zeta_0) \right\} \quad (\text{A.10})$$

We also note that T_1 always has an inverse

$$[T_1(\lambda)]^{-1} = T_1(-\lambda). \quad (\text{A.11})$$

Proof for Theorem 1. Assume that $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ is a solution for equation (A.4). Under what conditions does $\{\zeta_0(r), B_1(r)\}$ also satisfy equation (A.4)? Without loss of generality, we write

$$B_1(r) = B_0(r) + \lambda \Delta_0(r). \quad (\text{A.12})$$

Equation (A.4) can now be used to determine $\Delta_0(r)$. That ordinary *inhomogeneous* first-order differential equation in B now simplifies to

$$[r(r\zeta_0)'] \Delta_0' + [2r^2\zeta_0'' - 2(r\zeta_0)'] \Delta_0 = 0, \quad (\text{A.13})$$

which is an ordinary *homogeneous* first-order differential equation in Δ_0 . A straightforward calculation, including an integration by parts, leads to

$$\Delta_0(r) = \frac{r^2}{[(r\zeta_0)']^2} \exp \left\{ \int \frac{4\zeta_0'}{(r\zeta_0)'} dr \right\}. \quad (\text{A.14})$$

Adding and subtracting $\pm 2(r\zeta_0'')/(\zeta_0(r\zeta_0)')$ to the argument under the integral leads to

$$\Delta_0 = \left(\frac{\zeta_0(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta_0'(r)} \right)^2 r^2 \exp \left\{ 2 \int \frac{\zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r)} \frac{\zeta_0(r) - r \zeta_0'(r)}{\zeta_0(r) + r \zeta_0'(r)} dr \right\}, \quad (\text{A.15})$$

as advertised.

If we apply this transformation a second time we obtain no additional information. To see this, consider the sequence

$$\{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_1\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0, B_2\} \dots \quad (\text{A.16})$$

But at the second step (and all subsequent steps), since ζ_0 has not changed, so $\Delta_1(r) = \Delta_0(r)$. More generally, at all stages of the iteration $\Delta_i(r) = \Delta_0(r)$. We can write this as

$$\prod_{i=1}^n \mathsf{T}_1(\lambda_i) = \mathsf{T}_1 \left(\sum_{i=1}^n \lambda_i \right). \quad (\text{A.17})$$

or in the more suggestive form

$$\prod_{i=1}^n \mathsf{T}_1 \triangleq \mathsf{T}_1 \quad (\text{A.18})$$

where the symbol \triangleq indicates “*equality up to relabelling of the parameters*”. That is, transformation T_1 is “idempotent” up to relabelling of the parameters (see figure A.1). \square

A version of Theorem 1 can also be found in [3]. Specifically, after several manipulations, changes of notation, and a change of coordinate system, the transformation exhibited in equation (16.11) of [3] can be converted into Theorem 1 above.

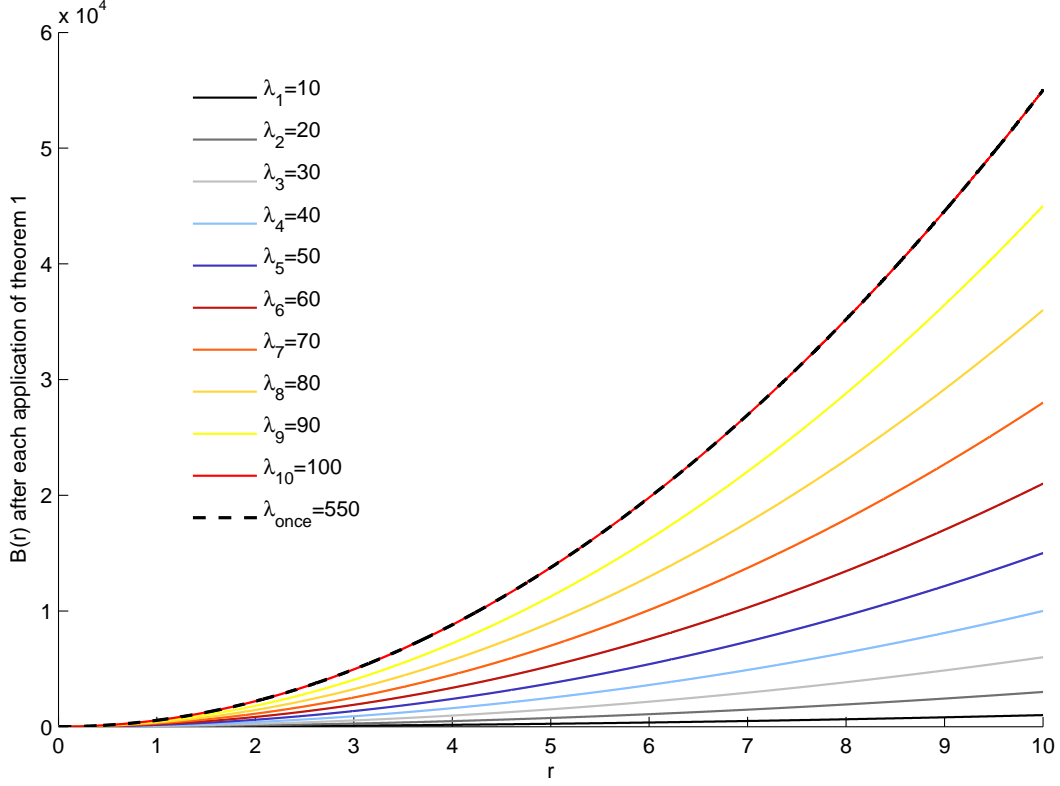


Figure A.1: The solid lines show $B(r)$ for 10 reapplications of Theorem 1 onto the Minkowski metric. The dashed line corresponds to a single application with a specific choice for λ_{once} . It can be seen that 10 applications of Theorem 1 can be expressed by one application.

Applying theorem 1 to a fixed $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ generates a one dimensional space of perfect fluid spheres, which leads to the corollary below:

Corollary 5. *Let $\{\zeta_0, B_a\}$ and $\{\zeta_0, B_b\}$ both represent perfect fluid spheres, then for all p*

$$\{\zeta_0, pB_a + (1 - p)B_b\} \quad (\text{A.19})$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere, furthermore all perfect fluid spheres for a fixed ζ_0 can be written in this form.

Proof. The result is automatic once you note that for fixed ζ_0 the ODE for B is linear,

(though not homogeneous, which is why the two coefficients p and $1 - p$ are chosen to add up to 1) . \square

We defer extensive discussion of the application of this theorem and its corollary until section A.3, where we use this and our other generating theorems as a basis for classifying perfect fluid spheres. At this stage we mention, only as a very simple example, that T_1 applied to Minkowski space results in the geometry of the Einstein static universe.

Theorem 2. *Let $\{\zeta_0, B_0\}$ describe a perfect fluid sphere. Define*

$$Z_0(r) = \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}}. \quad (\text{A.20})$$

Then for all σ and ϵ , the geometry defined by holding $B_0(r)$ fixed and setting

$$ds^2 = -\zeta_0(r)^2 Z_0(r)^2 dt^2 + \frac{dr^2}{B_0(r)} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \quad (\text{A.21})$$

is also a perfect fluid sphere. That is, the mapping

$$T_2(\sigma, \epsilon) : \{\zeta_0, B_0\} \mapsto \{\zeta_0 Z_0(\zeta_0, B_0), B_0\} \quad (\text{A.22})$$

takes perfect fluid spheres into perfect fluid spheres. Furthermore a second application of the transformation does not yield new information, T_2 is “idempotent” in the sense that

$$\begin{aligned} T_2(\sigma_n, \epsilon_n) \circ \cdots \circ T_2(\sigma_3, \epsilon_3) \circ T_2(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ T_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) \\ = T_2(\sigma_n \dots \sigma_3 \sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_{n\dots 321}), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.23})$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} \epsilon_{n\dots 321} &= (\epsilon_1 \sigma_2 \sigma_3 \cdots \sigma_n) + (\sigma_1^{-1} \epsilon_2 \sigma_3 \cdots \sigma_n) \\ &+ (\sigma_1^{-1} \sigma_2^{-1} \epsilon_3 \cdots \sigma_n) + \cdots + (\sigma_1^{-1} \sigma_2^{-1} \sigma_3^{-1} \cdots \epsilon_n). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.24})$$

Furthermore, theorem 2 is invertible (as long as $\sigma \neq 0$):

$$[T_2(\sigma, \epsilon)]^{-1} = T_2(1/\sigma, -\epsilon). \quad (\text{A.25})$$

Proof for Theorem 2. The proof of theorem 2 is based on the technique of “reduction in order”. Assuming that $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$ solves equation (A.5), write

$$\zeta_1(r) = \zeta_0(r) Z_0(r). \quad (\text{A.26})$$

and demand that $\{\zeta_1(r), B_0(r)\}$ also solves equation (A.5). We find

$$(r^2 \zeta_0 B'_0 + 4r^2 \zeta'_0 B_0 - 2r \zeta_0 B_0) Z'_0 + (2r^2 \zeta_0 B_0) Z''_0 = 0, \quad (\text{A.27})$$

which is an ordinary homogeneous second-order differential equation, depending only on Z'_0 and Z''_0 . (So it can be viewed as a first-order homogeneous order differential equation in Z' , which is solvable.) Separating the unknown variable to one side,

$$\frac{Z''_0}{Z'_0} = -\frac{1}{2} \frac{B'_0}{B_0} - 2 \frac{\zeta'_0}{\zeta_0} + \frac{1}{r}. \quad (\text{A.28})$$

Re-write $Z''_0/Z'_0 = d \ln(Z'_0)/dt$, and integrate twice over both sides of equation (A.28), to obtain

$$Z_0 = \sigma + \epsilon \int \frac{r dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}}, \quad (\text{A.29})$$

depending on the old solution $\{\zeta_0(r), B_0(r)\}$, and two arbitrary integration constants σ and ϵ .

To see that the transformation T_2 defined in Theorem 2 is “idempotent” we first show

$$T_2 \circ T_2 \triangleq T_2, \quad (\text{A.30})$$

and then iterate. The precise two-step composition rule is

$$T_2(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ T_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = T_2 \left(\sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_1 \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right). \quad (\text{A.31})$$

To see “idempotence”, note that for fixed $B_0(r)$ equation (A.5) has a solution space that is exactly two dimensional. Since the first application of T_2 takes any specific solution and maps it into the full two-dimensional solution space, any subsequent application of T_2 can do no more than move one around inside this two dimensional solution space — physically this corresponds to a relabelling of parameters describing

the perfect fluid metric you are dealing with, not the generation of new solutions. To be more explicit about this note that at step one

$$\zeta_0 \rightarrow \zeta_1 = \zeta_0 \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \right\}, \quad (\text{A.32})$$

while at the second step

$$\zeta_1 \rightarrow \zeta_2 = \zeta_1 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_1(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \right\}. \quad (\text{A.33})$$

That is:

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_2 = \zeta_0 & \left\{ \sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)}} \right\} \\ & \left\{ \sigma_2 + \epsilon_2 \int \frac{r \, dr}{\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)} [\sigma_1 + \epsilon_1 \int r \, dr / (\zeta_0(r)^2 \sqrt{B_0(r)})^2]} \right\} \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.34})$$

But this can be rewritten as

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_2 &= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int \frac{dZ_0}{Z_0^2} \right\} = \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \int d \left(\frac{1}{Z_0} \right) \right\} \\ &= \zeta_0 Z_0 \left\{ \sigma_2 - \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \left[\frac{1}{Z_0} - \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.35})$$

Therefore

$$\zeta_2 = \zeta_0 \left\{ -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0 \right\}. \quad (\text{A.36})$$

That is

$$Z_1 = -\frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} + \left[\sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\epsilon_1} \frac{1}{\sigma_1} \right] Z_0, \quad (\text{A.37})$$

from which the composition law

$$\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma_2, \epsilon_2) \circ \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = \mathsf{T}_2 \left(\sigma_2 \sigma_1, \epsilon_1 \sigma_2 + \frac{\epsilon_2}{\sigma_1} \right) \quad (\text{A.38})$$

follows immediately. (Note that the composition law for T_2 is actually a statement about applying reduction of order to 2nd-order ODEs, it is not specifically a statement about perfect fluid spheres, though that is how we will use it in the current article.) The general composition law then follows by induction. To find the inverse transformation we choose $\sigma_2 = 1/\sigma_1$ and $\epsilon_1 = -\epsilon_2$, for which

$$\mathsf{T}_2(1/\sigma_1, -\epsilon_1) \circ \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma_1, \epsilon_1) = \mathsf{T}_2(1, 0) = \mathbf{I}. \quad (\text{A.39})$$

□

Comment: As other special cases of the composition law we also mention the results that

$$\prod_{i=1}^n \mathsf{T}_2(1, \epsilon_i) = \mathsf{T}_2\left(1, \sum_{i=1}^n \epsilon_i\right), \quad (\text{A.40})$$

and

$$\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon)^n = \mathsf{T}_2\left(\sigma^n, \epsilon \left[\sigma^{n-1} + \sigma^{n-3} \dots + \sigma^{-(n-3)} + \sigma^{-(n-1)}\right]\right). \quad (\text{A.41})$$

Now as long as $\sigma > 1$ then for sufficiently large n we see

$$\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon)^n \approx \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma^n, \sigma^{n-1}\epsilon) = \sigma^{n-1} \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon) \triangleq \mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon), \quad (\text{A.42})$$

where at the last step we have used the fact that the overall multiplicative factor σ^{n-1} can simply be reabsorbed into a redefinition of the time coordinate. Because of this result, we see that for fixed $\sigma > 1$ (and fixed but arbitrary ϵ) repeated numerical applications of $\mathsf{T}_2(\sigma, \epsilon)$ will have a well-defined limit. In figure A.2 we have tested the composition law numerically.

A strictly limited version of theorem 2, with little comment on its importance, can be found in [3]. Specifically, after several manipulations, changes of notation, and a change of coordinate system, the transformation exhibited in equation (16.12) of [3] can be seen to be equivalent to the sub-case $\sigma = 0$, $\epsilon = 1$ of theorem 2 above.

For some purposes it is more useful to rephrase theorem 2 as below:

Corollary 6. *Let $\{\zeta_a, B_0\}$ and $\{\zeta_b, B_0\}$ both represent perfect fluid spheres, then for all p and q*

$$\{p \zeta_a + q \zeta_b, B_0\} \quad (\text{A.43})$$

